

PIONEER EVANGELISM

**Growing churches and planting new ones that are self-supporting
using New Testament methods**

Thomas Wade Akins

**E-mail address: wade.akins@pobox.com
Home Page: <http://www.pioneerevangelism.org>**

© Copyright
Junta de Missões Nacionais
Convenção Batista Brasileira
Rua Gonzaga Gastos, 300
Rio de Janeiro, R.J. 20-541-000. Brazil
All rights reserved.

Partial or entire copying of this book is permitted as long
as its content is not modified.

Previous editions in Portuguese:

1991	1.200 copies
1992	2.800 copies
1993	2.000 copies
1994	10.000 copies
1995	10.000 copies
1997	10.000 copies
1999	10.000 copies

TOTAL: 46,000 copies

Previous editions in English:

1995	1.000 copies
1999	5.000 copies
2000	4.000 copies

Previous editions in Spanish:

1999	3.000 copies
1999	10.000 copies

Published originally in Portuguese under the title
Evangelismo Pioneiro.

Cover Art: Rogerio Freitas de Oliveira
Preliminary translation: Christy Akins Brawner
Final version: Juan Alberto Galvis
Electronic edition: Reynaldo Amaral
Printed in Brazil

PRESENTATION

“For the time will come when men will not put up with sound doctrine. Instead, to suit their own desires, they will gather around them a number of teachers to say what their itching ears want to hear. They will turn their ears away from truth and turn aside to myths. But you, keep your head in all situations, endure hardship, do the work of an evangelist, discharge all the duties of your ministry.” 2 Timothy 4:3-5 NIV

The world today is as preoccupied with novelties as it has been for the last two millennia. Writing a book about evangelism -the reality of each person’s responsibility before Jesus Christ, is, in itself, a difficult task.

This assignment becomes even more difficult when the subject is Pioneer Evangelism. There are no spectacular resources involved, no surprising theories or theses ever heard before. The purpose of Pioneer Evangelism is to bring every person to know Jesus Christ as the first priority in life.

Dr. Akins has achieved good results in pursuing this mission. He has done so through his unique style, and because he has the authority of the empiricist.

The Biblical command comes to us with the same intensity it was heard by Timothy: “do the work of the evangelist.”

It is simple and direct. Just like the gospel itself.

Pr. Ivo Augusto Seitz, General Secretary:
Brazilian Baptist National Missions Board

INDEX

PRESENTATION	3
ACKNOWLEDGMENTS	9
DEFINITIONS	12
THE PRINCIPLES	13
THE PRACTICAL ASPECTS	47
THE PLAN	133
APENDIXES	159
THE PIONEER EVANGELIST AND THE USE OF SURVEYS	161
SIX TRUTHS FOR THE NEW CONVERT	167
A NEW LIFE	177
GOOD NEWS FROM GOD BIBLE STUDIES	199
GOOD NEWS OF JESUS BIBLE STORIES.....	231
BEGINNING A NEW LIFE IN CHRIST.....	273
DISCIPLESHIP TRAINING FOR LOCAL LEADERS	333
BIBLIOGRAPHY	355

IN MEMORY

Sherry Deakins Akins was the main person who was used of God to encourage Wade Akins to both begin and develop the Pioneer Evangelism program in Brazil. Realizing that writing, developing and piloting the program would require many hours alone and away from the family, Wade seriously struggled whether or not he should pursue the project. While sharing his doubts with his wife one evening, Sherry said to him, “Wade, you have got to do it; this ministry is of the Holy Spirit”. The Pioneer Evangelism program slowly developed and expanded not only in the state of Minas Gerais, Brazil where they resided and worked at the time but throughout the entire nation of Brazil beginning in 1989. She sacrificed her life for this ministry.

Sherry contracted a terminal disease called Schleroderma which put fibers in her lungs, intestines and vital organs. This was discovered in September 1992.

When asked if she would like to return to the United States to be with her family and leave Brazil permanently she responded by saying, **“The purpose of my life is to glorify Jesus Christ in both my life and in my death. God has called us to Brazil and I want to stay”**.

On December 4, 1993 Sherry suddenly fainted and died in their home in Belo Horizonte, Minas Gerais, Brazil. **Sherry truly was a person who both lived and died inside the will of God!**

And You?

Dedication

*I dedicate this edition of this manual to my wonderful and loving wife, **Barbara Ann Hawthorne**, who is a gift of God's grace to me. The material in this manual is not theory to Barbara for she has been and is being used of God in both soul winning and church planting. God has blessed and allowed us to minister together in training others in Pioneer Evangelism Conferences throughout all of Brazil and other nations of the world.*

.

Thomas Wade Akins

Acknowledgments

This training manual would not ever have been developed apart from the life and influence of my missions professor, **Dr. Cal Guy**. Dr. Guy and his teachings impacted my life in such a dramatic way that after studying at his feet for three years at Southwestern Seminary, I left a highly successful ministry in the nation's capitol and went to the mission field of Brazil. His constant letters and prayers have been a major blessing to me and have been used of God to encourage me during the hard times. His ideas and concepts are reflected over and over in this manual. Also, I am deeply grateful to the professors who taught me at Louisiana College, New Orleans Seminary, and Southwestern Seminary. Through the training I received at these institutions I learned how to do research and write practical projects.

I am very grateful to **Dr. Dennis Blackmon** for helping me develop many of the ideas found in this book, as well as contributing his notes on church planting. It was Dr. Blackmon who called me many times and encouraged me to both write and apply this project from the beginning. His advice and suggestions proved to be extremely helpful and valuable. In addition to the notes from Dr. Blackmon, I used material in this book from the books, The Indigenous Church by Melvin Hodges, Indigenous Church Planting by Charles Brock, and others.

Dr. Charles Brock is a former missionary in the Philippines. His volume, Indigenous Church Planting, published by Broadman Press made a major impact on my life and whose ideas are fundamental for this project. **Dr. Waylon Moore** has written the "Good News from God" Bible studies based on the gospel of John for Pioneer Evangelism. Dr. Moore has been used of God to disciple me and is a model before all who know him of the life and ministry of Jesus.

I want to recognize my brother in Christ, **Mario Ikeda**, former Director of the Evangelism Department of the Brazilian National Convention, who helped me immensely in writing this manual and piloting this program. While I was piloting this program in the State of Minas Gerais, Mario was piloting it in the state of Pará. Without Mario, the pioneer evangelism ministry would have never been taken to a national level in Brazil.

I would also like to thank **Pastor Aloizio Penido Bertho**, Executive

Secretary of the Minas Gerais State Convention. Pastor Aloizio has taught with me in the training clinics throughout the entire nation of Brazil. He has given me full support in developing this Pioneer Evangelism ministry in the state of Minas Gerais, particularly in the early stages when some of the ideas proposed were very unpopular among some pastors and leaders due to traditions that are not Biblical. For example, where does the Bible say that you can not organize a church unless it has an ordained pastor, property and a building?

A word of appreciation needs to be extended to all of the **forty original pioneer evangelists** who worked with me in the state of Minas Gerais during the experimental phase of the project. It was a long, tough two years of hard work on the part of everyone but sixty-three new mission works were started as a result. These evangelists kept good monthly records and evaluations of every phase of the project so that the program could be altered and improved. Due to their work many changes were made from the original version and program.

In addition, I would like to acknowledge **Dr. Bill Richardson** who was the Area Director of Brazil at the time this project was first launched in Brazil. He approved the project and enabled me to pilot the first group for the first two years.

Words can not express my appreciation to **Curtis Sergeant**, missionary in Singapore. Curtis and I became friends at a Strategy Coordinators Training Conference in São Paulo, Brazil. Curtis ministers in Asia and his contributions and suggestions have been invaluable. I also want to thank J.O. Terry and Jackson Day who have contributed the sections on Storying.

Finally, I want like to thank some dear and very special friends who have helped me in innumerable ways in my ministry and also stood with me through some difficult and tough situations in my personal life. They are International **Evangelist Sammy Tippit** from San Antonio, Texas; **Dr. Phil Jett**, pastor of the great Englewood Baptist Church in Jackson, Tennessee; **Mr. and Mrs. Gary A. Taylor**, Developer, from Jackson, Tennessee; **Mr. And Mrs. Ronnie Mackey**, contractor, of Heath Springs, South Carolina; **Mr. Guy Wolcott**, businessman of Portland, Oregon and **David Wilson**, President and Director of Open Air Campaigners International. Each has been used of God mightily and in a

special way in both my personal life, and ministry.

My deep love goes out to my two sons Tim and Jason. I want to thank my son- -in-law, **Jeff Brawner**, who worked on this manual and also provided the graphs in the strategy section of this book. Finally, I want to thank my daughter, **Christy**, who translated this book from Portuguese to English and also wrote the “Good News of Jesus” and the “Beginning a New Life in Christ” stories. Christy, I love you.

Thomas Wade Akins

DEFINITIONS

PIONEER—This is the term we use to refer to the person or persons who open up new works and plants new churches.

EVANGELISM—This term means “to proclaim the Good News of Jesus Christ”. The gospel is explained in I Corinthians 15: 3 says, “that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures, that he was buried, that he was raised on the third day according to the Scriptures...This is the good news of the gospel. To proclaim this good news to the lost people of the world is evangelism.

THE PRINCIPLES

This section of the book explains what the pioneer evangelist should do and why.

- I. What is Pioneer Evangelism?**
- II. The Bible and Culture.**
- III. The Bible and its Authority.**
- IV. Who can be a Pioneer Evangelist?**
- V. The Role of the Pioneer Evangelism Leader (PEL).**
- VI. The Evangelism Discipleship Team.**
- VII. Nine Basic Fundamentals for Successfully Starting Churches.**
- VIII. Six Keys to Growing Churches after they are started.**
- IX. Three Characteristics of the New Testament Church**
- X. Conclusion**

I. What is Pioneer Evangelism?

This ministry began in 1989 in the nation of Brazil after studying the local church-planting situation. It was during my first term of service as a Missionary with the International Mission Board of the Southern Baptist Convention that I went to language school for one year. After arriving on the field I developed a plan for church planting and started twelve new Baptist congregations in the state of Minas Gerais, Brazil.

After returning from furlough, I felt that the work was too slow. So, I began studying and reading about other methods of evangelism. Charles Brock's book, Indigenous Church Planting, guided me the most in this search. Through that process, I developed a training ministry based on the Bible, Dr. Brook's book, several other sources mentioned in this manual, and the church planting system that had been developed during my first term of missionary service in Brazil.

Once the program was written in it's original form, forty men and women were trained to carry out the plan. They entered sixty-three different cities in the state of Minas Gerais and started new congregations in all of them over a two-year period of time. Every month for two years these original pioneer evangelists sent evaluation reports to the Evangelism and Missions Department of the Minas Gerais Baptist Convention. At the end of the two years an evaluation team was formed to review the entire ministry. Over the next three years many, other teams were formed in other parts of Brazil. Pastors, laypeople, evangelist, and convention leaders. evaluated every aspect of the ministry. **In nine years, 94 churches were organized; 179 congregations were started; and 383 preaching points were begun in the state of Minas Gerais, Brazil.** All of these works were involved in Pioneer Evangelism, and the statistics have been documented by surveys. By 1999, over 15,000 Brazilians had been trained throughout the nation and an estimated of over 1,000 new works had been started through Brazil. Today, several hundred Pioneer Evangelism teams are formed each year to plant new works throughout the world.

This training manual and method is the result of the work of hundreds of men and women who put this program into practice. They are being used of God to reach thousands of unreached people and also to train thousands of pastors, missionaries, and lay people to start new churches. The goal in Brazil is to train thousands of pastors and lay leaders to start new churches. They all learn the basic principles presented in this manual, which are universal and can be applied to any culture and nation of the world. To put it in simple terms, **the Pioneer Evangelism method consists of training lay evangelists to go into areas where there are no churches (pioneer areas), winning souls to Christ, and starting new works.**

The key question today is, “How can we more quickly advance the gospel and start new churches?” The answer, in my opinion, is by training lay evangelists all over the entire world in how to start and develop new works.

Let us observe various problems that missionary leaders are facing in modern society:

1. Lack of vision
2. Untrained laymen
3. Lack of interest
4. Loss of church members
5. Lack of cooperation between churches
6. Difficulty to enter apartment buildings in large cities
7. High cost of land and construction

Can we overcome these problems? Certainly! In fact, Christ has already overcome them for us. However, we must restudy the basic methods of the Bible, and, more specifically, the methods used by the apostle Paul who is our model missionary.

Dr. Dennis Blackmon, a former missionary to Brazil, has identified four basic models of starting new churches.

1. The Traditional Model “with” a nucleus of believers.

The missionary organization or church defines the area of work. It then invites a worker, who is not necessarily a pastor, to perform the task. The worker finds a meeting place for the new group to meet and the missionary organization or a church get the support of five to ten Christians or more who live in the area. These few believers and the worker begin a congregation with the financial support of the missionary organization or church, as well as the support of the Local Association and State Convention in some cases. The missionary organization or church normally makes all of the important decisions.

2. The Traditional Model “without” a nucleus of believers.

The missionary organization or church dominates everything, as it does in the previous model until the new work is officially organized into a new church. The only difference is the absence of an original support group composed of local believers.

3. The Special Project Model

The missionary organization or church defines the area and determines a project that will make the biggest impact. Some typical examples of social projects would be Bible studies or ministries to the unreached community. These projects are chosen according to the organization’s own financial and personnel resources. For example, in 1992 there was a huge flood in the state of Minas Gerais, Brazil. Hundreds of people lost their homes. Barbara Akins was able to secure funds from her missionary organization to help people rebuild their homes. The mayor of the city donated the land, and they started an entire new neighborhood which they named, **BETHEL—THE CITY OF GOD**. They built 70 homes in a year and did home Bible studies. People were saved, and a church was started. This was a combination of using a Special Project and Pioneer Evangelism because studies were done in the homes of lost people. Usually, using the Special Project method a worker is invited to execute the project, and the organization or church provides a meeting hall

and officially opens a missionary front. The missionary organization or church may choose to make all of the decisions.

4. The Pioneer Evangelism Model

The missionary organization or church defines the area that will be reached and chooses “mature laymen” to carry out the work. These laymen are efficiently trained and equipped by experts in missionary work. The purpose of this manual is to train them. Next, the laymen will start the work without a group of Christians or with only a few Christians supporting. Their goal is to start a new church that is self-governed, self-supported, and self-propagated under God’s leadership. The pioneer evangelist guides the new group to make its own decisions from the beginning in place of having them made by the missionary organization or church.

II. The Bible and Culture

It is very important that we separate that which is Biblical and that which is cultural. I may be an American, but God has called me to work as a missionary in Asia (Vietnam), the United States (Washington DC), Africa (Zimbabwe), and Brazil.

Every place in the world has its own distinct culture. We understand that the work of the Lord must be done based on the Bible and based on each country’s own culture. It must not be based on the religious traditions of a culture. For example, in the United States the majority of churches have their worship services on Sunday morning at 11 a.m. Does this mean that all worship services in the world must start at 11 a.m.? NO! In the United States, many churches use hymn music. Does this mean that churches in other nations of the world should use music out of the hymnal? NO! They can if they choose to do this, but they should sing music based on the local culture and using local instruments. A church can use, for example, electrical guitars, trumpets, drums and other instruments or whatever.

WARNING! Music is not praise. Music is a means of praise. It is a method of expressing our feelings to God. For this reason, it is important that the music used reflect the culture of the people and not necessarily the culture of the pioneer. It is impossible to be a missionary or an effective pioneer unless we understand the culture of the local community.

There are many cultures and subcultures within each nation. It is important that the pioneer knows and understands the culture of the people within the area where he plans to start a new work. It is also important that he does not try to change the culture but rather minister to allow Christ to change the hearts of people. The only things that should be changed within a culture are those that are contrary to the principles of the Bible. For example, in some jungles of the world, the people may practice the sacrificing of babies. Such practice is obviously contrary to biblical doctrine. In this case, the pioneer should attempt to change the culture by preaching the truth of the gospel.

The main point is that each region of a country has its own culture, and it is important that the work of the pioneer be contextual to such local culture, and not be influenced by the culture of another region or country. The pioneer must only preach the gospel, for the gospel itself will change the aspects of a culture that are not biblical.

III. The Bible and its Authority

Each person in the world has a source of authority. Dr. Ralph Neighbor, Jr. in his book Survival Kit (Broadman Press) describes four sources of authority to determine what is right and what is wrong.

1. Intellect: This is when a person determines what is truth through his own ability to rationalize between that which is right or wrong, good or bad, possible and impossible, and so forth. For example, a person who relies on his intellect may deny the miracles of Jesus because he cannot scientifically prove them.

2. Experience: this is when a person determines that which is right or wrong by his feelings, perceptions and emotions. For example, one day I caught a cab in the city of Rio de Janeiro, Brazil and I began to speak to the driver about the gospel. He informed me that in a meeting of his religion a blind man was cured and was enabled to see again. When I asked the name of his church, he told me that he was not a Christian and that in fact his religion was not even related to Christianity.

Satan has power to do miracles, but he cannot save anyone or give them real peace and total forgiveness. Sometimes he uses miracles to deceive people. The Bible says, in II Thessalonians 2: 9-12, **“The coming of the lawless one will be in accordance with the work of Satan displayed in all kinds of counterfeit miracles, signs, and wonders, and in every sort of evil that deceives those who are perishing. They perish because they refused to love the truth and so be saved.”**

Some say the following: “I believe in drugs and alcoholic beverages because I feel good when I use them.” The source of authority for this person is his feelings. This is a very dangerous way to formulate your belief system. Other say I believe in this particular faith healer or medicine man because he was able to cure a disease. But a miracle worker, whomay do many spectacular things, gaining fortune and fame, can often not be of God at all. We cannot base our faith on miracles, feelings or even our experiences. Instead we have to base it on the person of Jesus Christ, who He is and his promises in the Word of God.

3. Tradition: This was one of the greatest problems that Christ confronted. He fought against the traditions of the Jews because they were always putting their traditions above the needs of man. In Mark 3: 1-6, we read the account of Jesus curing a man with a shriveled hand on the Sabbath. He broke one of the Jewish traditions, and because it was the Sabbath, from that point on the Pharisees plotted to kill Him.

When we put tradition above the Word of God, we invalidate His word. Jesus said in Matthew 15:6-9 that such people are hypocrites. “Thus you nullify the Word of God for the sake of your tradition. You hypocrites! Isaiah was right when he prophesied about you, ‘these people honor me with their lips but their hearts are far from me. They worship me in vain; their teachings are but rules taught by men.’”

4. Scripture: The Word of God is our only source of real authority. God reveals truths through His written Word. They are irrevocable and complete knowledge.

Jesus said in John 8:32: “And you shall know the truth and the truth shall make you free.”

Isaiah 40:8 says: “The grass withers and the flowers fall, but the Word of our God stands forever.”

Psalms 119:105 says: “Thy word is a lamp unto my feet and a light unto my path.”

Psalms 119:140 says: “Your promises have been thoroughly tested and your servant loves them.”

Psalms 119:160 says: “All your words are true; all your righteous laws are eternal.”

Notes:

IV. Who can be a Pioneer Evangelist?

In the New Testament we see the various responsibilities of leadership. The structure of the primitive church was not complex; on the contrary, it was very simple. It had three offices:

1. The Bishop: 1 Timothy 3 explains the qualifications of a bishop. Many think this is a synonym for a pastor.

2. The Deacon: This word can only be found six times in the New Testament. Four of these references are in I Timothy; one is in Philippians; and another is in Romans. (1 Timothy 3: 8, 10, 12, 13; Philippians 1:1; and Romans 1:1). This word means “servant.”

3. The Elders: Acts 14:23 says that Paul elected “elders” for all of Asia Minor. The word “elder” appears 56 times in the New Testament. Twenty-eight of these references refer to Jews and 28 refer to leaders in the New Testament churches. Acts 15:2, 4, 6, 22, 23, 16:4 and 21:8 say that the church of Jerusalem had elders. Who were these people? They were local leaders who assumed the leadership of the church.

The apostle Paul followed the following process:

A. He entered a city. (Acts 19:1)

B. He won lost souls for Christ. (Acts 19:8, 10, and 20)

C. He taught the new converts. (Acts 19:9, 10)

D. He trained and equipped local leaders. (Acts 20: 17-21).

E. He organized churches and chose elders (local leaders) to assume the leadership of the local church. (Acts 19:1-20, 35)

F. He left the city and moved to another city. (Acts 20:36-38)

This should be the process of the pioneer evangelist. The principal question for us is “Who can be a pioneer evangelist?” To answer this question we must study Ephesians 4:11-12. In this passage there is a list of the functions of the church.

The first of these is the “**apostle.**” There are two types of apostles. The first disciples of Jesus were apostles. Paul was an apostle. The word “*apostle*” means “*someone who is sent.*”

The second group is the “**prophets.**” The prophets were the preachers. The word “prophet” appears 242 times in the Bible. Deuteronomy 18:18 describes their main function. “*And I will raise up for them a prophet from among the brothers: I will put my*

words in his mouth, and he will tell them everything I command him.

Some of the prophets of the Old Testament were Aaron (Ex. 7:1), Moses, Elisha, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Daniel and many others. Also, the wife of Isaiah was a prophetess (Isaiah 8:3). In the New Testament some examples of prophets are Jesus Christ, Agabus (Acts 21:10) and the four virgins of Philip (Acts 21:9).

The third group was the **“evangelists.”** These people are those that proclaim the good news of Jesus Christ with the purpose of winning lost souls. **(These are the people we are calling “pioneers” in the Pioneer Evangelism ministry).** In the New Testament, Philip was a layman, deacon, and an evangelist. Acts 21:8 ***says “Leaving the next day, we reached Caesarea and stayed at the house of Philip the evangelist, one of the seven.”*** **He was a lay person who preached the gospel to the lost people and baptized them.** Acts 8:12 says, ***“But when they believed Philip as he preached the good news of the Kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ they were baptized both men and women.”*** Today, throughout the world, we have men and women who are fulfilling the function of missionaries in beginning new churches.

The fourth ministry is that of the **“pastor-teacher.”** The pastors were those people who were primarily trainers. The pastor is the leader of the leaders. He is the spiritual leader, a servant who guides his people in the way of God. He should have the gift of being a teacher and an “equipper.”

Each Christian in Christ receives a spiritual gift when the Holy Spirit enters his heart at the moment of conversion. 1 Peter 4:10 says: ***“Each one should use whatever gift he has received to serve others. Faithfully administering God’s grace in its various forms.”*** According to Ephesians 4:11-12, there are members of the church that have the spiritual gift of the evangelist.

Who can be a pioneer and start new churches? Can a pastor be a pioneer? Can a layman be a pioneer? Can a local leader be a

pioneer? Can a lawyer be a pioneer? Can a teacher be a pioneer? Can a missionary be a pioneer?

Everyone can be a pioneer who feels the call to be an evangelist and to fulfill the Biblical qualifications. But what are the qualifications to be a pioneer, regardless whether the person is a pastor or layman?

1. Be saved (Acts 9).
2. Receive the call (Galatians 1:15-16).
3. Be filled with the Holy Spirit (Galatians 5:16, Ephesians 5:18, and Acts 13:9).
4. Know how to use the Word of God (II Timothy 2:15).
5. Desire to please and obey God (I Thessalonians 2:4).
6. Love the new converts and take care of them (I Thessalonians 2:7-12 and Titus 1:9).
7. Know how to pray (I Thessalonians 1:2, Colossians 4:2-6).
8. Live a pure life (I Timothy 5:22, Titus 1:7-8).
9. Be firm in the faith (Titus 1:9).

How can we win a nation to Christ and begin a new church in every town, city, and village if we do not train mature lay people that have the gift and the function of an evangelist to execute their gift? There are not enough pastors in the world to reach the entire world for Christ. The people of God need to be trained for that task!

If the preacher-teachers train a large army of lay people that meet the Biblical qualifications, we can fulfill the goal of starting churches in all of the cities, neighborhoods and villages of the entire world.

Who can be a pioneer? Anyone who is called by the Holy Spirit to tell the good news of Christ and start new churches.

[illegible]

is to form a TEAM of disciples that you can train to become Pioneer Evangelist. This team of disciples is what we call the Pioneers in this training manual. The goal is for each pioneer to become a Pioneer Evangelist leader (PEL) and form his own team of disciples /or pioneers. This is the multiplication process.

In the Pioneer Evangelism ministry, the PEL has two primary responsibilities:

1. The first primary responsibility of the PEL is to train the pioneers one by one or in small groups. This training is not the type that can be done in mass or in large groups. He should train them in small groups. So, all pastors and/or leaders are asked to form a team. We suggest that you have one to twelve people in your team. These will be your disciples whom you will train. If you do not have people resources to form a team then you will start from zero, win and train your team. The key thing is to have as your objective to form a team of pioneers or disciples. You will meet with your team every week for prayer, reporting, consultation and training.

Dr. Waylon Moore in his book, Multiplying Disciples, says the following:

- A. Discipleship is one of the most strategic methods to have an unlimited personal ministry.
- B. Discipleship is the most flexible ministry.
- C. Discipleship is the quickest and most secure way to mobilize a body of Christ for evangelism.
- D. Discipleship has the greater long term potential to produce fruits than any other ministry.
- E. Discipleship produces for the church mature lay leaders who are Christ-centered and oriented in the Word of God.

2. The second responsibility of the PEL is to maintain weekly contact with the pioneer. The PEL should spend at least an hour each week with his team of pioneers. What to do in these meetings:

- A. The PEL should begin the meeting with prayer. We are in the middle of a spiritual war and our only defense is prayer.
- B. Ask each pioneer evangelist to share his/her victories of the week.
- C. Ask the pioneer evangelists to relate the problems they have confronted during the week and make a note of each one.
- D. Counsel the pioneers about each problem.
- E. Train the team using the practical section of the **Pioneer Evangelism** manual. For example, restudy the chapter entitled “How to Give Your Testimony,” or “Evangelism” to make sure the pioneer knows how to win souls. Or perhaps it might be necessary to review the chapters called “Prayer,” “Indirect Methods,” or “How to Train Local Leaders,” etc. Use this time to train the workers.
- F. Teach them practical aspects of the ministry like how to write a sermon, how to do counseling, etc. It is the responsibility of the PEL to train these pioneers well.
- G. Give the pioneers a general orientation and conclude the meeting with prayer. (Look at the other practical suggestions in the chapter, “Weekly Follow-up of the Pioneer.”)

If the pioneer evangelist lives far away, the PEL should have a longer meeting once a month or every two months. He can also maintain contact by writing letters. This is what the Apostle Paul did. It is very important that the PEL periodically visits all of his pioneers and maintains his team meetings.

VI. The Evangelism Discipleship Team

The role of the PEL is to train his church members to fulfill their ministries. At each church, God has provided some lay people with the special gift for the work of evangelism and the planting of new churches. The PEL will identify potent leaders with these gifts. The role of the Pioneer leader is then to train these men and women separately using the **Pioneer Evangelism** manual and other good materials. The team of pioneers should be recognized as evangelists by the local church. The local church will make a commitment to pray for them, give them support, and send them to start the new work.

The goals and objectives of the Evangelism Discipleship Team?

1. Win lost souls.
2. Baptize the new converts
3. Follow up and disciple the new converts.
4. Train local leaders where a new work is beginning. (God will raise up new leaders whom the Pioneer Evangelist will need to train.)
5. Organize a new church that is self-sustained, self-governed, and self-propagated under the leadership of the Holy Spirit of God.
6. Begin the multiplication of other new works. Each pioneer will become a PEL by forming his own team of pioneers and beginning a new work. This is the strategy for developing a church planting movement.

Notes:

VII. Nine Basic Fundamentals for Successfully Starting Churches

Donald A. McGavran in his book, Understanding Church Growth, and Howard Snyder, in his book, Orientations for Starting Urban Churches, describe the basic fundamentals for successful church planting.

These principles are universal and work in any country in the world. They work in big or small cities.

1. Identify people who have the spiritual gift of starting new works.

Each church possesses laymen and evangelists that have the spiritual gifts of evangelizing and starting new works. **According to Ephesians 4:11-12, the job of the PEL, be he a pastor or layleader, is to equip the saints (laypeople) to fulfill their ministry.**

2. Develop the leadership of the laity.

Developing the leadership of the laymen is the primary basis for starting a new church in an area where there is not a church. There are not enough ordained ministers to fulfill this objective without the efforts of the laymen. The primary task of the PEL is to equip the laymen in their ministry. **Ephesians 4:11-12** says that God gave the local church, *“some to be **apostles** (missionaries), and others to be **prophets**, and others to be **evangelists**, and others to be **pastors and teachers** to prepare God’s people for works of service so that the body of Christ may be built up.”*

A Pastor of a local church once said, “If I allow my lay people do baptisms etc. what will I do?” This pastor had a little understanding of the Biblical role of pastor. Pastors, missionaries and leaders need to focus on two major important roles:

- A. Train the laity to be evangelists.** These evangelists will have the spiritual maturity to be pioneers.

- B. Train local leaders and/or evangelists** who will assume the local leadership of the work as quickly as possible. It is essential that these local leaders be trained in Biblical doctrines such as how to have a quiet time, how to grow in their faith, and how to participate in church leadership.
- 3. Have a solid Biblical understanding of the nature of the church.**

It is impossible to start something if you do not know what you are starting. What is a church? **A church is a group of baptized Christians who are united to fulfill the following purposes:**

- A. Praise (this includes the practice of the ordinances)
- B. Evangelism
- C. Discipleship
- D. Human Needs Ministries
- E. Fellowship

What is the nature of a church? What are its characteristics?

- A. Self-governing under the leadership of God.
 - B. Self-sustaining under the leadership of God.
 - C. Self-propagating under the leadership of God.
- 4. Identify receptive areas.**

One way to determine areas that will be more receptive is by observing where the major social changes are occurring. In these areas, the pioneer evangelist will be able to find people who will be receptive to

the gospel.

Another way to discover receptive people is by finding those who feel a great need for the Lord due to a special crisis. This can happen to anyone regardless of his or her social class. Sometimes the rich have great conflicts with their children due to drugs and other social problems. The gospel has an answer for the needs of people in all of the social classes in the world. Our job is to find these people and share Christ with them.

5. Communicate the faith in Christ intensely.

There is nothing more important than this. The apostles had a message of repentance and acceptance of Christ for salvation. They preached this message with such intensity that they reached the entire world. Today we need to do the same! **Psalms 126:6** says, *“He who goes out weeping, carrying seeds to sow, will return with songs of joy, carrying sheaves with him.”* If you are not reaping in your ministry, it may be because you are not sowing correctly. Ask yourself how many people heard your witness about Christ last week and received an invitation to be saved. **Presence evangelism** (just being present) is not enough. **Proclamation evangelism** (just sharing the good news) is not enough. There must be **persuasive evangelism**. **Persuasive evangelism** is when you try to persuade the person to commit his life to Jesus Christ as Lord and Savior.

When was the last time that you prayed and literally cried for the salvation of the lost?

6. Emphasize the beginning of the church in the home.

Paul preached the gospel to the Jews and the Gentiles. After he preached the gospel in the city, the new converts had fellowship in a convenient location. Sometimes they had this fellowship time in the homes of the new Christians. Other times they used a public place such as a house or a school.

The following were typical meeting places:

1. Acts 16:40 **the house** of Lydia- Phillipi.
2. Acts 17:5,6 **the house** of Jason- Thessalonica
3. Acts 18:7 **the house** of Titus, the Just- Corinth
4. Acts 19:9 **the school** of Tyrannus- Ephesus
5. Acts 20:20 Paul taught **publicly and also from house to house.**

Paul preached in Thessalonica only for a few weeks; however, he left an established church in that city and left it in the hands of the laymen of Thessalonica.

He stayed in Ephesus for two years teaching in the lecture hall of Tyrannus (Acts 19:9). **What were the results? All of the people in this entire region of Asia Minor heard the Word of God** (Acts 19:10,20). Paul did not do this alone! **He always was discipling laymen to fulfill the word of the Lord.** **II Timothy 2:2 says,** “And the things you have heard me say in the presence of many witnesses entrust to reliable men who will also be qualified to teach others.” **This verse clearly explains the secret of Paul’s success. He fulfilled the order of Jesus when he commanded us to “make disciples.”**

In our modern society, and primarily in the larger cities, it is essential to emphasize the importance of beginning churches in the home due to the high cost of property. Christians everywhere feel the need to unite to praise and have fellowship with each other. This does not require a building or a worship center, especially in the beginning. By using homes, the church can grow without the burden of renting or purchasing a building.

A natural problem derived from renting or buying a lot is the price of the property. In small cities a meeting place can be affordable. However, in large cities this is often not the case. For this reason, it is very good to

use homes, backyards, or other such places in the beginning.

Experience tells us that conversions are multiplied when a church is located in a natural environment where the guests can participate without feeling threatened. It is also important to note that in using this method it is easier to penetrate into neighborhoods and cities.

One of the greatest problems, however, with churches that meet in homes is that this can be interpreted as a temporary activity. But the new group can use this initial period to save money in order to later rent a hall or buy a lot.

Our objective is to prepare new works to use their own resources without relying on outside help.

7. Provide an enjoyable worship service where the believers will be happy.

When we enter the presence of God, we draw close to him with sincerity. In Matthew 6:9-13, God teaches us to approach His throne with praise. Praise is, therefore, our answer to the greatness and the goodness of God. We focus all of our attention on the attributes of God, on who **He is** (thanksgiving is an answer to what God **has done** for us.) He is eternal, omnipotent, omnipresent, omniscient. He is EL-SHADDAI (EL= greatness, SHADDAI = all-powerful). He is JEHOVAH JIREH (God provides). He is Jehovah Rophe (The Lord who cures.)

There are many other attributes of God. Praise is to adore God for who He is. This is something that occurs in one's heart and can be manifested in a variety of different ways.

8. Do not put the burden of “property” on the people.

It is better that a solid nucleus of Christians be formed before addressing issues such as the preacher's salary, property, and a construction project for building a worship center.

- 9. Have as a priority from the very beginning of the work the multiplication of the church, beginning with these two principles:**
 - A. Begin a good number of churches at the same time through the training of laymen.
 - B. Train the believers of the new work to have a vision for opening new churches. This can be taught by using indirect methods of Bible study in the formation of new leaders or by training them in Storying and other methods.

VIII. Six Keys to Growing Churches after they are Started

Once the church is started, how do you grow it? Many books have been written on this subject and many studies have been done. However, for a church to grow there are six basic elements that are absolutely essential. These are:

1. A Prayer Ministry

A Church needs to have a foundation of prayer. The pastors and leaders not only need to tell their people that they need to pray, but they need to teach them how to pray. The problem for most Christians is that they do not know how to have a time alone with God. Here are a few suggestions:

- A. Apply to your life the suggestions in the practical section of this manual on “The Pioneer and Prayer
- B. Learn how to “hear the voice of the Lord,” and to make an intercession list for each day of the week. It is also important to make a list of praise, etc. This is in the Practical section of

this manual.

- C. Begin to teach the people to pray, and to apply prayer to life. This is one of the main reasons why Christians spend so little time in prayer even though they are always hearing sermons on the need for prayer. They do not know how to have their own time alone with God.
- D. Form prayer groups in homes. The activity of prayer does not have to be restricted to a worship service setting.
- E. Sometimes conclude the worship service with everyone in small groups on their knees in prayer. This is very important for developing a church of prayer.

2. A Praise Ministry

Howard Snyder says in his book, *Guidelines for Urban Church Planting*, that to grow a church it is necessary to provide a joyful worship service where the people will be happy. This is a universal principle.

No one wants to participate in a worship service that reminds him or her of a funeral. A faith that is without joy and happiness is not a real faith. A happy worship service that has good music is contagious. This does not mean that we should have a worship service without order. Surveys from around the entire world show that the churches in each nation that are growing are those churches that have happy worship services.

Remember that music is a means to praise, it in itself is not praise. We praise God, and not our music. Music is a cultural means of praise. It is not necessary to destroy a culture in order to introduce the gospel.

Real praise is adoring God for who He is. Praise is something that happens within one's heart and is manifested in different ways. Some churches like to use traditional hymnals. Others like to use praise choruses. We believe that we must respect the cultures and the subcultures of the

local people, and we should also respect the autonomy of each church. But, independent of the style of music a church chooses to use, it is important that their worship service be happy and alive. It is a celebration of our God.

Some African churches use cymbals and even dance to the front of the church during the praise period of the worship service. It is wrong to say, “You must not do this because this is not the way we conduct our services in the United States, Brazil, India, or wherever.”

As part of the worship service a church should regularly baptize and have the Lord’s Supper. Dr. Charles Brock in his book, Indigenous Church Planting, has made the following observations regarding these two important ordinances:

To baptize you must have the following:

- A. **A proper candidate**- someone who has repented of his sins and has put his faith in Jesus Christ as his only Lord, Savior, and Mediator. There is not one verse in the Bible that says that a baby should be baptized. It clearly states that we should baptize only those people who have been converted. A baby does not have the ability to accept Christ as his only Lord, Savior, and Mediator.
- B. **The proper authority**- a local church that is self-governed can decide whom they will and will not baptize.
- C. **The proper administrator**- Each church is autonomous and can choose the person who will administer the baptism.
- D. **The proper method**- immersion in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit.
- E. **The proper purpose**- to symbolize that Christ died for our sins, was buried, and resurrected from the dead. It is also a symbol that we died to our sins and received a new life in

Jesus Christ.

To celebrate the Lord's Supper one should have the following:

- A. The proper participants-** disciples of Christ.
- B. The proper authority-** Jesus Christ. He commands believers to practice the Lord's Supper to remember his death.
- C. The proper administrator-** the church is autonomous and can choose the person who they wish to conduct the Lord's supper. This should be the pioneer or local leader or the church can choose her own members to lead this part of the worship service.
- D. The proper purpose-** to remember and announce the death of Christ until He returns.

Above all else, in our worship the preaching of the Word of God should be on the Word of God. **If the pioneer does not have experience preaching he should choose a passage from the Bible and do the following six things with it:**

- A.** Read the verse.
- B.** Explain the spiritual truths of the verse.
- C.** Explain how each truth can be applied to the lives of those listening.
- D.** Give an illustration about each truth.
- E.** Do this with each verse or paragraph of the passage.
- F.** Conclude the message with an invitation.

Unless the pioneer has had a lot of experience and is an excellent preacher, it is better for him to limit himself to a time frame to 20 minutes.

WARNING: It is better to preach 20 minutes each week to a group that is growing than to preach 30 or 50 minutes to people who do not wish to return and will not recommend their church to their friends.

He can also use Bible studies and Storying. Study the chapters on How to Lead Home Bible studies in this manual and the chapters on Storying to learn how to preach good messages and lead Bible studies.

3. An Evangelism Ministry

A church needs a special evangelism outreach ministry in order to grow. You can use the plan in this manual or any other plan. The most important thing is that the church takes the initiative in meeting the people who need to understand the gospel out in the world, as opposed to waiting for them to come to the Sunday service at your meeting place. The pioneer needs to have a visitation ministry which trains the members to the lost outside the church meeting place to evangelize the lost with the purpose of winning them to Christ in places other than just the meeting place of the church.

4. A Discipleship Ministry

To grow it is necessary that a church has a program that will integrate the new converts and will train local leaders one on one or in small groups. The pioneer will train these local leaders in the faith and equip them in practical areas such as: prayer, giving their testimony, winning souls for Christ, leading a home Bible study, teaching Bible Studies, etc.

It is important for the pioneer evangelist to always take the local leaders or new converts with him when he goes into the field. For example, the new believers that the pioneer is discipling should accompany the pioneer when he is leading Bible studies in the homes of people who have not accepted Christ as Lord. The local leader should accompany the pioneer and watch him in action as he gives his own testimony, wins people

to Jesus, etc. No one can disciple someone only in the classroom.

There are two secrets to good discipleship: First, train the people one on one or in small groups. Secondly, it is essential to take the people out into the field with you while you are spreading the gospel.

5. A Fellowship Ministry

To grow it is necessary that a church has a fellowship where there is real love amongst its members. When visitors enter the church they should be able to feel the love of God as well as the love between the members. If there is bitterness, hate, and division it is impossible for a church to grow. Harmony and love are essential for visitors to feel the fellowship of a church and feel accepted by it.

6. Proper Administration

A pastor of a church of 4,000 members in the United State was asked, “What is the difference between being the pastor of a church that has 40 members and a pastor of a church that has 4,000 members?” His answer was “administration!”

It is necessary that a pioneer has the mentality of training his members to do God’s work and not of trying to do everything alone. A pastor can control everything in a church of 30 to 80 members; however, it will reach a point where growth will become impossible unless he trains the people in methods of administration. He should delegate responsibilities to mature and well-trained people. The primary role of the pioneer will then be a trainer.

Notes:

IX. Three Characteristics of the New Testament Church

The objective of the pioneer evangelist is to start self-sufficient churches under the leadership of the Holy Spirit, which have three characteristics of the New Testament church:

1. Self-governing under the leadership of God.
2. Self-supporting under the leadership of God.
3. Self-propagating under the leadership of God.

We will briefly observe each of these three principles:

1. Self-governing under the leadership of God.

The principle of self-governing is very important for those who believe in democracy. Our churches are united because of our doctrines and because we want to work together in the areas of evangelism and missions. The result of this principle in the spiritual life of the church is so vital that if there is a failure in this area, the entire effort of establishing a new, self-sufficient church can be compromised.

Self-government results in spiritual responsibility in the areas of self-support and self-propagation. Failure to put the responsibility of self-government in the hands of converts will suffocate the efforts of starting a new church.

It is almost impossible for the pioneer evangelist to avoid the temptation of trying to govern the new church. It is only through the power of the Holy Spirit that the pioneer can leave the responsibilities of preaching, teaching, and administering to the local members. Since the beginning of its life, the new church will be influenced by the pioneer evangelist. However, the church will become the one to make its own decisions instead of the evangelism organization and its pioneer. How is this possible? It is possible because the pioneer will be developing a self-governing church from the very beginning.

Some may say that the church is too young, does not have enough instruction, and does not have enough experience to make its own decisions. However, despite the fact that a church which is three weeks old does not have all of the knowledge of a ten year-old church, it should still make as many of its own decisions as possible with the guidance of a Godly, wise, spiritual leader. The role of the pioneer evangelist will be one of a counselor and not one of a decision-maker. He will give orientation and guidance, and will keep the new church from error. If they begin to move in the direction of error, he will need to lend strong leadership in order to keep them on course; however, the pioneer evangelist should allow the church to make primary decisions.

We should observe some practical steps:

- A. The pioneer evangelist will enter the city and win souls for Christ.
- B. He will teach Bible studies and basic doctrines using the indirect method developed by Charles Brock, Storying or some other method.
- C. The new converts will be baptized.
- D. The Holy Spirit will raise up local leaders in every case, if the pioneer will let Him. In Acts 14:23 we see how Paul directed this process. The leaders that Paul and Barnabas selected for each church were local leaders. Paul started churches in Cyprus (Acts 13: 4-12), Antioch (Acts 13: 13-52), Iconium (Acts 14:1-7), Lystra and Derbe (Acts 14:8-20). In each city, Paul and Barnabas won souls, started churches, selected local leaders and left. If we have the same trust in the Holy Spirit that they did, we will have the same results.
- E. The new converts will learn Biblical doctrines.
- F. The converts that agree on doctrine will plan to organize a church.

- G. The local group will choose its leaders:
1. Pastor
 2. Deacons and/or elders
 3. Others, when necessary

The apostle Paul surrendered the care and orientation of the new converts to the Holy Spirit and the grace of God. He did not think that it was necessary to stay with them in order to keep them from failing.

For the church to be self-governed, the pioneer cannot make the decisions for the new group. They can give them orientation, but they should let the new group make its own decisions. This will enable the local leaders to assume the leadership more quickly **BUT HE NEEDS TO MAKE SURE THAT THE CHURCH MAINTAINS DOCTRINAL PURITY.** Even the Apostle Paul wrote letters to the churches he started to combat false teachers.

The pioneer evangelist must decide before he ever begins the new work that his purpose will be to develop a self-governing, self-sustaining, and self-propagating church under the leadership of God he/she should teach this repeatedly to the new converts.

2. Self-supporting under the leadership of God.

A New Testament church is self-sustaining. This should be observed from the very beginning of its life. We believe that the church should support missionaries and pastors. Pastors are to be paid by their own churches. Missionaries draw a salary from an association of evangelical churches. The laymen receive their wages from their own jobs. However, all people, pastors, missionaries, and laymen, are dependent upon the Lord. In every situation, regardless of who starts the church, we should start a church that supports and sustains itself.

A new church is not ready to have all of the ministries that the older churches have, but any new church has sufficient funds to support its basic ministries and do all of the things that God desires for that church at that moment.

Therefore, the pioneer evangelist should plant this kind of church: one that learns how to completely finance its own ministries through its own tithes and offerings. The pioneer should teach these concepts through his attitudes and actions before the church is ever organized.

By reading the book of Acts, one can see that this is the method used by Paul. There is not one verse that indicates that the Gentiles were supported by the Jews of Jerusalem or by the church in Antioch. Neither the association of churches nor a sponsoring mother church has the resources to support the new church.

Melvin Hodges says in his book The Indigenous Church that if a congregation has ten tithing families it can support a full time pastor if he will live on the same economic level as its people.

The spiritual growth of the church demands that it be self-supporting. If the pioneer and the sponsoring mother church deprive the new believers of the privilege of giving and of the responsibility of sacrificing for the continuation of the work, the result will be a weak church. It will not have the initiative to spread the gospel. In place of turning to God to supply its needs, the church will turn to the association of churches or to the mother church.

When a new church struggles and fights, it grows. Missionary Charles Brock explains in his book Indigenous Church Planting that the result is like when a person tries to help a butterfly escape from its cocoon. The butterfly struggles to leave its cocoon and a person must only watch. If he or she loses patience and tries to help the caterpillar by cutting the threads with a knife, the struggle ends. However, the result is a weak and helpless butterfly that will only live a few minutes. The helping bystander broke one of the laws of life. If the person had only allowed the butterfly to struggle, the result would have been a strong, beautiful, and well-developed butterfly.

A meeting place built with the money of the struggling local people is greater than a big, beautiful building built with foreign money or money from an association of churches. This is not to say that it is wrong for someone to help a new church. For example, if a mother church wishes to help in the construction of a building, this help should be defined as a one-time project. This is different from long term or eternal support. However, it is best for the local group to struggle to build their own facility, if this is what they want to do.

The problem arises because many leaders believe their congregation is too poor to tithe. The people will eventually believe this as well. In reality, these very people have the resources to accomplish all the things God plans for their church. Our source is GOD! This principle should be taught from the very beginning.

The question is “how” do you develop a self-supporting church? If the pioneer evangelist plans to plant a self-supportive church, then it is very important for him to build a correct foundation from the beginning. The first believers will establish the model for the next believers. This model will be the foundation on which the church emerges from the converts. Therefore, it should be taught that every aspect of the finances comes from the members of the church and that they should contribute part of their tithe to missions through the local church and association of churches.

It is easier to teach about the finances of God’s work to a new believer, one who has been saved only a few weeks, than to teach this principle to someone who has been saved for over a year. The Follow-up material should be used to teach this lesson. New converts should assume their own financial responsibility from the beginning.

In many parts of the world churches can not be organized until they have a full-time, ordained pastor, property and a building. This is a very traditional model. However, these churches are placing man made barriers on themselves that God does not require. Please note the following regarding how much this will cost to organize one church.

1. Pastor’s salary per month _____ x 12 months _____ x 7 years = _____
(It takes an average of 7 years to organize a new church with this method.)
2. Pastor’s house rent _____ x 12 months _____ x 7 years = _____
3. Property _____
4. Building _____

Add all of these up and see if your church can afford to start a new work using the traditional model.

We have no option but to go back to the Bible and do what Jesus said to do and what the Apostle Paul did. The Apostle Paul started new works in homes, schools and in public places using lay leaders. This is God's plan to win the world to Christ.

3. Self-propagating under the leadership of God.

A New Testament church is self-propagating. By its very nature, it should share its life with others. This type of church is evangelistic and has the desire to start new churches.

With the world demographic explosion, we should develop New Testament churches that will plant other churches. Each church that is started through the principles of the New Testament will discover that it produces fruit more quickly than a church that is organized through other methods. Therefore, it is the responsibility of the pioneer to plant New Testament churches.

Each church should be responsible for its region. It should request a layman in another city to open his home for six months. After this time, it should begin to organize into another church. In other words, a new church needs to be started within walking distance of everyone in the world. Each church should have the local leader and the pioneer to take care of it. The duty of the pioneer at this point is to train the leaders of the churches. Also, a rule of thumb should be to start one new church for every 1,000 people in highly populated areas.

In the beginning, the pioneer is an evangelist. He wins souls and afterwards teaches these new believers the basic doctrines of the faith. However, the next step is to raise up local leaders, leaving the work in their hands, in order for him to start a new work in a new neighborhood or city. The pioneer evangelist should continue to train these local leaders and organize the different groups into churches. He should then leave the works in the hands of the local leaders, and visit them to help and encourage.

The work of the pioneer evangelist is to train each group to organize itself into a new church and also to train new leaders to open another work

as quickly as possible in different place. This new church will then be self-propagating.

Notes:

X. CONCLUSION:

The pioneer evangelist who wants to be successful, should do the following:

1. He should be well trained and prepared.
2. He should win lost souls for Christ in the homes of lost people or in other places out in the world such as offices, campuses etc. instead of only beginning worship services in a hall with the “come to me” philosophy.
3. He should begin happy and exciting worship services in the homes of new believers.
4. He should know how to follow up the new believers into the faith and the body of Christ.
5. He should know how to disciple and train local leaders.
6. He should allow the new converts to provide the rent if they need a hall for their joyful services.
7. He should be trained how to baptize new converts and celebrate the Lord’s Supper.
8. He should train the local people how to win lost souls and lead evangelistic Bible studies.

9. He should allow the local people to decide on and provide their own meeting place.
10. He should train local leaders how to lead the local church. They should be taught to lead Bible studies and worship services, administrate the business, preach, win lost souls, baptize new believers, celebrate the Lord's supper, collect tithes, and raise offerings for missions.
11. He should organize the new church as one which is self-governing, self-supporting and self-propagating under the leadership of God.
12. He should instruct the new church as to the use of this same method in multiplying itself to become new churches in the surrounding areas. Churches multiplying themselves are the key to winning the entire world to Christ. Think multiplication—where can we begin new churches.

THE PRACTICAL ASPECTS

This section of the manual will explain how the pioneer evangelist will execute his ministry in practical ways. These methods work if applied under the guidance and leadership of the Holy Spirit of God. The reason why they work is that they were inspired by the Holy Spirit and recorded in the New Testament. The pioneer evangelist is applying New Testament evangelism methods in our modern day context when using this approach.

- I. The Pioneer Evangelist and the Holy Spirit**
- II. The Pioneer Evangelist and Prayer**
- III. The Pioneer Evangelist and Salvation**
- IV. The Pioneer Evangelist and the Personal Testimony**
- V. The Pioneer Evangelist and Personal Evangelism**
- VI. The Pioneer Evangelist and How to Begin A New Church**
- VII. The Pioneer Evangelist and How to Lead Bible Studies Through the Indirect Method**
- VIII. The Pioneer Evangelist and How to Lead a Home Bible Study Without Bible Study Materials**
- IX. The Pioneer Evangelist and How to Lead the Good News Bible Studies**
- X. The Pioneer Evangelist and How to Lead Follow Up Bible Studies**
- XI. Bible Storying by J.O. Terry**
- XII. Bible Storying by Jackson Day**
- XIII. The Pioneer Evangelist and the Steps of the Pioneer Evangelism Method**

OBSERVE: This section presents SIX different models of presenting the gospel: personal testimony, sharing the plan of salvation directly, Bible studies without studies, Bible studies using indirect methods, storying. **THIS IS NOT A PROGRAM. THESE ARE PRACTICAL PRINCIPLES WHICH YOU CAN APPLY BASED ON YOUR REALITY IN YOUR CULTURE.**

I. The Pioneer Evangelist and the Holy Spirit

The apostle Paul was totally dependent upon the Holy Spirit. It was through the Holy Spirit that he had the power to preach the message of salvation and have great results, perform great miracles, and start new churches. If the pioneer evangelist wants to have good results in his ministry, he must depend on the Holy Spirit at all times.

When entering a city and contacting interested people

The Holy Spirit opens the doors through various different means, people, and circumstances in order to start a new work. In every city there are people who are interested in the gospel. God is at work everywhere. The Holy Spirit opens the hearts of the lost. He convicts them of their sins and gives them a new birth to the glory of Jesus Christ. The Holy Spirit is essential in beginning a new work.

When leading home Bible studies

During the meetings the pioneer will have the opportunity to discover emerging leaders and to train them. The apostle Paul entered into a city, stayed there two or three weeks, won souls, and found local leaders to lead the new church. The pioneer should depend upon the Holy Spirit to raise up the local leaders.

When organizing the new church

The church belongs to the Holy Spirit. He is its source. If a church is a product of the power of the Holy Spirit, He will provide the members

with the spiritual gifts that are necessary for the life of the church. These gifts are found in I Corinthians 12, Roman 12:6-12 and I Peter.

When exiting a city

The pioneer should depend on the Holy Spirit to continue the work after he leaves the city. When the Apostle Paul left the cities, he was able to leave the work in the hands of the local leaders because in reality he was leaving the work in the hands of the Holy Spirit.

To execute the work of Christ it is necessary for the pioneer to be bold and filled with the Holy Spirit. Read Ephesians 5:18, “Do not get drunk on wine which leads to debauchery, instead be filled with the Holy Spirit.”

1. The attributes of the Holy Spirit

The Holy Spirit is **eternal**. - Hebrews 9:14

The Holy Spirit is **omnipresent**. - Psalms 139: 7-10

The Holy Spirit is **omnipotent**. - Luke 1:35

The Holy Spirit is **omniscient**. - John 14:12,26

These four attributes are distinctive of God. Only God is eternal, omnipresent, omnipotent, and omniscient.

2. The work of the Holy Spirit within a lost person

The Holy Spirit testifies that Jesus is the truth. - John 15:26-27

The Holy Spirit convicts the world of sin, justice, and judgment. - John 16:8-11

3. The work of the Holy Spirit within the Christian

- The Holy Spirit gives the Christian assurance of eternal life.- II Corinthians 1:22, Ephesians 1:13,14
- The Holy Spirit renews the Christian.- Titus 3:5
- The Holy Spirit frees the Christian of the law of sin and death.- Romans 8:2

- The Holy Spirit strengthens the Christian with power from the inner man.- Ephesians 3:16
- The Holy Spirit renews and frees the Christian to witness. - Acts 1:8

4. The fullness and the fruits of the Holy Spirit

Ephesians 5:18 orders all Christians to be filled with the Holy Spirit. What are the fruits of the Spirit? Galatians 5:22,23 says that the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness and self-control.

The purpose of the fullness of the Holy Spirit is to share the Word of God with boldness. -Acts 4:29, 31

5. The Conditions for being filled with the Holy Spirit

- A person must be saved. -Acts 2:38
- One must confess all the known sin in his life.- I John 1:9 (read Psalms 66:18)
- By faith, ask the Holy Spirit to fill you, and control you.- I John 5:14-15. (read Romans 1:17)
- Obey God each moment of every day. - Acts 5:32

CONCLUSION

As you study this section, we encourage you to take the time to look up each of the following verses, and to allow the Holy Spirit to speak to you through them.

The believer has the Holy Spirit through the symbolism of anointing (I John 2:20, 27; II Corinthians 1:21), the symbolism of a seal (II Corinthians 1:22; Ephesians 1:13), the symbolism of a deposit (II Corinthians 1:22; Ephesians 1:14), the symbolism of a baptism (I Corinthians 12:13 a), and the symbolism of a drink (I Corinthians 12:13b; John 4:14, 7:37-39a).

We should obey the One who told us to “Go into all the world and preach the gospel to every creature (Mark 16:15).” We should love His Word, because we have been sanctified through him (John 17:17).

We must work in the harvest of the Lord confidently and joyfully because He is working in us (Philippians 1:6; 2:13). There is never a lack of spiritual gifts for Christians (I Corinthians 1:7). The Holy Spirit enables us for the service of the Lord, and He does this through the gifts he has given us (I Corinthians 12:4-6).

We should obey God as we understand what He instructs in His Word. By doing this, the result will be fruit from Him who is working the will of God in us (Gal. 5:22-26).

APPLICATION

Pray silently.

Ask the Holy Spirit to reveal any sin in your life.

Confess all the sins, which He brings to your mind.

Dedicate your life to him and obey daily.

II. The Pioneer Evangelist and Prayer

INTRODUCTION

It is impossible to be a disciple of Jesus Christ unless you are a person of prayer. The pioneer should be determined to maintain his time alone with God as the first and foremost priority in his life. If this is not the case, the pioneer will never know God in a deep way. He will not stay under God's direction, nor will he produce any true, spiritual fruit.

Please observe eight aspects of prayer that can be practiced during our time alone with God.

1. Praise and Worship

The Bible says in Psalms 48:1, "Great is the Lord, and most worthy of praise...." Psalms 34:1-3 says, "I will extol the Lord at all times; his praise will always be on my lips. My soul will boast in the Lord; let the afflicted hear and rejoice. Glorify the Lord with me; let us exalt his name together."

We praise the Lord in our worship services on Sundays. But, how do we act in our time alone with the Lord between Monday and Saturday? The Bible says in Psalms 22:3, "Yet you are enthroned as the Holy One; you are the praise of Israel."

What is praise? Praise is lifting up and exalting the Lord for WHO He is. Thanksgiving is thanking God for what he has done for us. Praise is exalting the character and the attributes of God.

Biblically, to praise God, one should utilize his mind, his will, and his emotions. It is not wrong to express emotions during worship services when we are praising the Lord. To say that this is wrong is the same as saying that someone cannot use his mind or his will. Man has a body, a soul (his **mind**, **will** and **emotions**), and a spirit (I Thessalonians. 5:23).

However, there is a very large difference between emotions and emotionalism. Emotionalism is losing control of one's emotions. If this happens in a worship service, the service begins to fall out of the Biblical limits of order. The Bible does not prohibit the use of emotions in worship services; however, it speaks out against emotionalism.

Here are a few suggestions as to how one can praise the Lord in his own personal time with God:

A. Sing hymns to God using a hymnal or Christian songbook

If there are other people in the room in which you are having your time alone with God, you may wish to read the words of the songs mentally to the Lord. A good example of a hymn full of praise is the hymn, "Holy, Holy, Holy."

Read the first verse of the hymn, then stop, think, and meditate on the meaning of the words. Praise the Lord based on what you have read in this verse. After doing so, read the second verse, and do the same thing throughout the hymn. In the subject index of most hymnals, a list of praise songs may be found.

B. Sing or read praise choruses

The Bible says in Ephesians 5:19-20, "Speak to one another with psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs. Sing and make music in your heart to the Lord, always giving thanks to God the Father for everything, in the name of the Lord." Be assured that praise choruses are Biblically correct.

C. Read passages of prayers in the Bible, and personalize each verse

Psalms 8:1 says, “O Lord, our Lord, how majestic is your name in all the earth! You have set your glory above the heavens.”

To personalize this verse, simply substitute your name. For example, “O Lord, ‘my’ Lord, how majestic is your name in all of the earth, for you have set your glory above all the heavens.” Read each verse one time as it is found in the Bible, then read the same verse again personalizing the verse in personal praise to the Lord.

Some chapters of the Bible that are very appropriate for this type of worship are: Psalms 8,9,19, 24, 65, 92,104, 139, the prayers of Jesus and the apostle Paul, various chapters found in the book of Revelation. Another way to find good praise passages in the Scripture is to simply look up the word “praise” in a concordance.

Praise is an essential part of each believer’s spiritual growth. Read Revelation 4 and 5 to discover what we will be doing in heaven.

2. Confession

It is not necessary to spend a great deal of time in confession. When we commit a sin, the Holy Spirit immediately speaks to our consciences in regard to our sin. The confession of each sin should occur at the moment that the Holy Spirit convicts us. The Bible says in I John 1:9 that, “When we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sin, and cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”

During our time alone with God, the Holy Spirit may bring to mind recent non-confessed sins. Perhaps He will remind us of a bad attitude, anger, or bitterness towards someone. In this case, we should confess all of the sins in our hearts.

3. **Thanksgiving**

The Bible says in Philippians 4:6, “Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition with thanksgiving, present your requests to God.”

Gratefulness is thanking God for what He has done for us. For example, “I thank you God for my health, my food, and my family.”

4. **Hearing God’s Voice**

The Bible says in Psalms 62:5, “Find rest, O my soul, in God alone; my hope comes from Him.” Psalms 46:10 says, “Be still, and know that I am God...”

How do we hear the voice of God?

God primarily uses two means to speak to His believers on a daily basis: the Holy Spirit and His Word. Romans 10:17 says, “Consequently, faith comes from hearing the message, and the message is heard through the word of Christ.”

The Bible is a love letter from God. God’s desire is to speak to every one of us everyday through His Word by the Holy Spirit. Here are a few ways to hear the voice of God:

- A. Begin reading a book of the Bible. We suggest beginning with the book of Ephesians.
- B. Ask God to show you spiritual truths in each verse or paragraph. For example, Ephesians 1:1 says, “Paul, apostle of Christ Jesus by the will of God, to the saints in Ephesus, the faithful in Christ Jesus.” Four spiritual truths are:
 - 1) Paul is a believer and an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God.
 - 2) He was chosen by the will of God.
 - 3) The word, “saints” refers to the Christians in Ephesus.
 - 4) These Christians were faithful to Christ Jesus.
- C. Personalize each spiritual truth. God is speaking to the reader through these truths. For example, God is telling me four truths in Ephesians 1:1:
 - 1) Wade, you are a disciple of Jesus Christ by my will.

- 2) Wade, I chose you by my will.
- 3) Wade, you are a saint where you live in Belo Horizonte, Brazil.
- 4) Wade, I want you to be faithful to Christ Jesus.

5. Paraphrase the Word of God

Use the verse to pray to God. Using this particular verse in Ephesians, we can say, “Dear Father, my God, I thank you, Lord, because you, Lord, called me to be a disciple of Jesus Christ. I thank You, Lord, because I am a Your saint. I am a person set apart by You. My Father, my desire is to be a person who is faithful to Christ. In Jesus’ name I pray, Amen!”

After walking through these steps with the first verse, proceed to the second verse and continue all the way through the text.

6. Intercession

The Bible says in Ephesians 6:18, “And pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of requests. With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the saints.”

Intercession is prayer for other people. Most people have a blank sheet at the end of their Bible. Divide this page in eight columns, or perhaps use a separate notebook to make a list of the people for whom you wish to pray.

For example, on the top of the page write the word, “**Daily**,” then proceed to write the name of your spouse, children, parents, brothers, etc. These people are those that are closest to you.

On the next page, or in the next column, write the word, “**Sunday**.” Under this word make a list of those people for whom you will pray on this day of the week. Pray for your pastor and his wife, your Sunday School teacher or your students.

Proceed to the next page, or column, on which you will write the word, “**Monday**.” This is the page where you will list your family members and friends.

The next page, or column, will have at the top the word, “**Tuesday.**” On this day pray for the people you know who are lost.

“**Wednesday**” will be at the top of the next page or column. Under this word write the names of missionaries, leaders of your association of churches, leaders of your church or others for whom you wish to pray.

On the next page or column write the word “**Thursday.**” On this page write the names of the leaders of your country. First Timothy 2:1&2, “I urge, then, first of all, that requests, prayers, intercession and thanksgiving be made for everyone- for kings and all those in authority, that we may live peaceful and quiet lives in all godliness and holiness.”

On the next page or column write the word “**Friday.**” On this page or column write the names of those you know who have fallen away from the church, or perhaps, who are lost.

The following page is entitled “**Saturday.**” In this list write the names of friends, fellow church members and special projects in which you are involved.

If the pioneer does this, he will pray for many people each day of every week. Some people believe that Romans 16 is Paul’s prayer list for the Christians in Rome.

INTERCESSORY PRAYER LIST

PRAYER: PRAISE AND WORSHIP, CONFESSION,
THANKSGIVING, INTERCESSION, AND SUPPLICATION.

DAILY	SUNDAY	MONDAY	TUESDAY
Spouse, Children, Parents and Siblings	Bible study peers, Spiritual leaders and their Families	Company, Employees, Boss, Work mates	Lost people and Friends

WEDNESDAY	THURSDAY	FRIDAY	SATURDAY
Pioneer Evangelists and Christian leaders	Public officials I Timothy 2:1-2	Discouraged believers and special projects	Other close relatives, extended family

Using this sheet, you will pray daily for many people

Chart created by Pr. Gilberto Penido Bertho

7. Meditation and Scripture Memory

The Bible says in Joshua 1:8, “Do not let this Book of the Law depart from your mouth; meditate on it day and night, so that you may be careful to do everything written in it. Then you will be prosperous and successful.”

This verse says that meditating on the Word of God day and night results in a transformed life. Romans 8:29 says that God’s purpose is to make the pioneer conformed into the image of Jesus Christ. The result of this is a prosperous walk and a successful life. The question is however, “How do we meditate on the Word of God day and night? How do we meditate on the Word when we are asleep?”

- A. Choose a verse in the Bible each week.
- B. Read the verse in its context.
- C. Ask God to show you the spiritual truths of this verse.
- D. Personalize this verse in a prayer.
- E. Write this verse on a card including the reference.
- F. During the day, read this verse various times. Do this while you are waiting in line or in your quiet time, but remember to pull your card out at least five times a day.
- G. The last thing you do every night is to read this verse. This is done to embed the verse in your subconscious.

8. Supplication

The Bible says in Hebrews 4:16, “Let us then approach the throne of grace with confidence, so that we may receive mercy and find grace to help us in our time of need.” Supplication is simply presenting to God your own needs.

III. The Pioneer Evangelist and Salvation

Your beliefs always precede your actions. Matthew 12:34 says, “for out of the overflow of the heart the mouth speaks.” The pioneer evangelist must understand basic New Testament doctrines. What the pioneer evangelist believes about the Bible, salvation, the ministry and the

church is crucial to his success in ministry. His belief concerning salvation is reflected in his message. Many Christians do not know how to answer even the most basic questions about the Bible.

1. What is the Gospel? (Write in pencil your understanding of the Biblical definition)

To find the only definition of the gospel in the Bible, read I Corinthians 15:1-4.

2. What is eternal life? (Write your answer in pencil, based on a Biblical definition)

To find the only definition of eternal life in the Bible, read John 17:3.

It is very important that the pioneer evangelist clearly understands what is salvation according to the New Testament. Since a New Testament church is composed of saved people, the doctrine of the pioneer evangelist concerning salvation is fundamental to his work. The pioneer evangelist does not have any function unless he believes that people without Christ are eternally lost and will spend the rest of eternity in hell. **Do you really believe that?** The pioneer evangelist must also understand that a person without Christ is separated from God and their life is filled with tension, loneliness, fear, guilt, and that he has a great emptiness that lies deep within his soul.

A very important issue is the doctrine of the final judgment. There are some cultures that practice spiritism and the doctrine of reincarnation is very strong. Jesus taught us about the resurrection, not reincarnation. In Hebrews 9:27 it says, "Just as man is destined to die once and after that to face judgment."

Luke 19:10 says that Jesus came to seek and save the lost. This is also the task of the pioneer evangelist. People are lost if they depend on any other thing for their salvation except Jesus. Galatians 2:16 says, “Know that a man is not justified by observing the law, but by faith in Jesus Christ. So we, too, have put our faith in Christ Jesus that we may be justified by faith in Christ and not by observing the law, because by observing the law no one will be justified.”

Just as it is important for the pioneer evangelist to be conscious that lost people are not saved, the lost individual must see himself as lost. We cannot simply desire to see “decisions for Christ,” instead we must make disciples. We have to integrate the new believers into the work of the church, train the local leaders, and organize a self-sustaining, self-governing, and self-propagating local church under the leadership of the Holy Spirit.

Therefore it is extremely important for a person to clearly understand what he must do to be saved. A person is not saved until he has repented from his sins and has put all of his trust in Jesus Christ as Lord and only Savior. The pioneer evangelist must do everything he can to make sure that the interested people understand both their lost condition and what they should do to receive Christ.

First- He must repent of his sins. What is repentance? The word “to repent” means to turn your life around in the direction of Jesus Christ and change your mind (ideas). To change one’s mind, to turn from one’s sin to Jesus, means to recognize that the individual has been controlling his own life and desires to surrender the control of his life to Jesus. It means to submit one’s life to Jesus Christ. Repentance is abandoning your sins (a self-controlled life) and giving your life to Jesus as Lord and Master.

Second- He must put his faith in Jesus as his only Lord, Savior, and Mediator. This is more than knowing in one’s mind the facts about Jesus Christ. The Bible says in James 2:19 that even the demons believing in the facts about Jesus.

The word “faith” or “to believe,” in the Greek is “Pistis.” This means that one must give his life to Christ in order to be one with Christ. Anything less than this is not true faith. A major problem is that many people believe in historical facts about Jesus Christ with their minds. Our

job is to show people the difference between true faith, a faith that saves, and one that is false.

A true faith that saves does not put its trust in any additional thing for salvation. For example, a person must stop trusting in his good works, good life, idols, the Virgin Mary, angels, and saints, and place his complete trust in Jesus Christ as his only Mediator, Savior, and Lord. In his book, Indigenous Church Planting, Charles Brock says, “A definition of salvation that does not accurately treat the issues of sin, repentance, and faith will produce a religious group but will not produce a church.”

Every pioneer evangelist must follow the guidance of the Holy Spirit because He is the only one that will convict the lost of his or her sins. The pioneer evangelist must share the true and full gospel of Christ in the power of the Holy Spirit for Him to work in the hearts of the people and for Him to produce fruit that remains.

IV. The Pioneer Evangelist and the Personal Testimony

The purpose of a testimony is to share a personal experience. It is possible to argue about things that have happened to other people, but it is difficult to argue with someone about their own experience. In Acts 22:1-16 and Acts 26:9-23, the apostle Paul tells about his story of how he accepted Christ and what happened after he found Him.

1. Guidelines to remember in sharing one’s testimony

- A. Be brief (maximum of two minutes).
- B. Remember that your purpose is to show the lost person how you found Christ. The gospel will be explained later.
- C. Do not preach a sermon.
- D. Do not explain the plan of salvation at this time.
- E. Do not have an invitation.
- F. Do not use vague terms. For example, “I was baptized.” A non-believer will think that in order to be saved you must be baptized. It is better to say, “One night I accepted

PIONEER EVANGELISM

- Jesus in my heart,” or “I trusted Christ as my only Savior and Lord.”
- G. Use Bible verses if you desire.
 - H. Write your testimony out. It should be no more than 250 to 350 words.
 - I. Conclude the testimony with these two phrases:
 - 1) Now I am sure of having eternal life.
 - 2) May I explain to you from the Bible how you may have assurance of eternal life?

2. Testimony

Answer the following questions to help you write your testimony:

- A. How was my life before I knew Jesus? Tell about your attitudes, lifestyles, and sins. (Acts 22:1-5 and 26:4-11)

- B. How did I realize my need for Jesus? (Acts 22:6-8 and 26:12-15)

C. Where and how did I accept Christ? (Acts 22:6-10 and 26:13-18)

D. How has my life been different since I accepted Christ? (Acts 22:10-21 and 26:19-23)

E. Conclusion:

Always conclude by saying, “I now have assurance of eternal life. May I explain to you what the Bible says about how you may have the assurance of eternal life as well?”

What you have done is to build a bridge between you and the lost person. You are now asking for permission to cross the bridge and enter into his personal life. He may say “yes” or he may say “no.” If he agrees, you present the gospel to him. If he says “no”, then you may ask him if you can write his name in your Bible as a reminder to pray for him daily.

V. The Pioneer Evangelist and Personal Evangelism

This method should be used when you do not have the opportunity to start a Bible study and this is your only opportunity to share the gospel. However, if you can return and lead a home Bible study do not use this method. We do not want to rush those who are not ready to receive Christ.

OBSERVE: THIS APPROACH SHOULD ONLY BE USED IN A CHRISTIAN BASED CULTURE WHERE PEOPLE ALREADY HAVE A GENERAL BACKGROUND OF THE CHRISTIAN FAITH. WE USE OTHER APPROACHES IN THIS MANUAL FOR NON CHRISTIAN BASED CULTURES.

We do want to emphasize that how this is accomplished will vary greatly depending on culture. We suggest some tips on how to enter into a home, gain a hearing, and etc. This will vary greatly by culture or the openness of society to Christianity (due to security issues). For example, in the Latin American, European, Eastern and Southern African context where there is more awareness and understanding of Christianity the approach suggested here has proven successful.

REMEMBER: THIS APPROACH WILL BE USED IF YOU ONLY HAVE ONE OPPORTUNITY TO SHARE THE GOSPEL. IF YOU CAN GO BACK WEEKLY AND DO A HOME BIBLE STUDY AND/OR USE THE STORYING METHOD OF SHARING THE GOSPEL WE STRONGLY RECOMMEND YOU DO THAT INSTEAD OF PRESENTING THE GOSPEL ON THE FIRST VISIT. HOWEVER, IF YOU ONLY HAVE ONE OPPORTUNITY THEN DO THE FOLLOWING:

Guidelines that may prove helpful in some cultures:

1. Six objectives of the visit:

- A. Try to win the confidence and friendship of the unbeliever.
- B. Identify his spiritual condition. Ask the following question, “Do you know that you have eternal life if you died tonight?” Explain the plan of salvation.
- C. Invite the person to accept Jesus as his only Lord and Savior.
- D. Invite the person to visit the next Bible study that you will be conducting.
- E. Make sure that you will be welcome to visit again.

Not everyone will accept Jesus as Savior and Lord but it is important to develop a good relationship with those that do not.

2. When you should not enter a home:

- A. During a time when all the extended family is together.
- B. When the house is full of other visitors. In such a situation simply say, “I can come back some other time.”
- C. When the family is getting ready to leave.

3. How to gain the person’s interest

If at the moment of your visit, a person’s attention seems to be dedicated to a particular activity like watching television, wait until the end of the program or come back later. However, most of the time, the easiest thing to do is to try to talk to him about various subjects. If he is more interested in talking to you than in the TV then you can ask him to turn down the volume and let him turn it off. Never turn off the television without permission.

4. The responsibilities of the team (if the pioneer is not alone)

- A. The team leader will direct the visit.
- B. The team members will be in prayer and share as asked to by the team leader.

5. The responsibilities of the team members

- A. Participate in the beginning of the conversation.
- B. Help by sharing their testimonies (at the leader's request).
- C. Share parts of the plan of salvation if this has been pre-planned by the leader.
- D. Help with babies.
- E. Help win other people in the home.
- F. Pray silently.

6. How to get inside the home

- A. Introduce the team. The team leader will introduce each member of the team, identify his church or Bible study group, and ask permission to enter. For example, "Good evening. My name is John and her name is Mary. We are visiting people in our community. May we come in and talk to you for a few minutes?"
- B. Choose a good place to sit down. The team member who will share the gospel should sit closest to the host. This will enable him to do the following:
 - 1) Maintain eye contact with the person.
 - 2) Maintain a normal conversational volume.
 - 3) Read each verse with the person.A principle: If you listen to the person in the beginning, you will earn the right to be heard in the end.
- C. Discuss things of interest to the host.

**A principle: If you listen to the person in the beginning,
you will earn the right to be heard in the end.**

7. A guide for the introduction - "FIRE".

A. FAMILY

A good place to start a conversation is about one's family. This is a good place to find common ground. The pioneer can tell about his own family and ask questions about the family of the non-believer.

For example:

- How many children do you have, sir?

-Three

-I have three too. My children are 8, 10 and 16. How old are your children?

B. INTERESTS

Where do you work? What kind of company is that? What is your responsibility there? Oh, I work at . . .etc.

C. RELIGIOUS EXPERIENCE

What church do you go to? (This would only be a good question in a Christian based culture. Or, what religion do you have?)

D. ETERNAL QUESTIONS

Non-Christian Based Culture Questions

In this case you may should begin with a more basic question such as, “What is your understanding of God and who He is?” Listen to the person and then ask if you could conduct a series of studies with him. In a non-Christian based culture you would ask if he would like to learn about the Creator God who created the world and how you can come to know Him personally. Use simple Bible studies or chronological Bible stories.

Christian Based Culture Questions

“May I ask you a question? If you died tonight do you know that you have eternal life and would go to heaven?” (Memorize this question). If the person doesn’t answer correctly then continue to give your testimony and share the gospel. If he answers, “I do have assurance,” then ask him this second question, “Suppose you were before God at this moment and He asked you, ‘Why should I let you into my heaven?’ How would you answer him?” (Memorize this question). If he cannot answer you correctly, then share with him the gospel. Another question that you can use is this, “Have you developed a personal relationship with Jesus Christ or are you in the process of building one?”

OBSERVE: The eternal questions for Hindus, Buddhists, and animists should be very different than those used in Christian based culture such as Roman Catholicism. In these cultures, any references using words such as “God”, “Jesus”, “heaven” or “hell” must be defined according to each individual cultural context. For example, describing God as the Creator of all things as the all-powerful Spirit is often a good start for defining who is God. The incarnation of Jesus and its purpose must be described when referring to Him.

Another good example is the term “heaven”. Heaven for a Buddhist means escape from all desires. For a Hindu, it means escaping from the cycle of reincarnation. For many animists, it can mean many things and may only be distinguished from hell by whether or not your posterity makes sacrifices to you (in many East Asian settings).

In many cultures the Bible is NOT a book of which people are aware. Many if not most people among unreached people groups will never have heard of the Bible. What I have done in these cases is to begin by sharing that the Bible is a book that God gave us to reveal Himself. They do not have to believe this. They probably will not, but if they are willing to study it with you then the Holy Spirit WILL do his job and begin to reveal to them truth.

NEVER argue whether the Bible is God’s Word or not. Just present that your faith is based on what you believe to be written in God’s book and you would simply like the opportunity to share it with them.

It is very important that the pioneer finds an appropriate witnessing tool for the people he/she is ministering among.

THE FACTS OF THE GOSPEL NEVER CHANGE, BUT THE APPROACH WILL ALWAYS CHANGE BASED ON CULTURE.

REMEMBER: In a Christian based culture you can use the preceding eternal questions. But in a non-Christian based culture you will need to use

discernment in identifying the different levels of spiritual understanding. The person's understanding of words such as "heaven" may not be the same as the concept in the Bible.

8. Testimony (optional)

After asking the questions about the eternal life, the pioneer may share his testimony or ask another member of the team to do so. He may say, "Mary, will you please share with us the testimony of how you received Jesus Christ and eternal life into your own life." After this testimony, the team leader will then present the gospel.

9. Permission

The pioneer must always ask permission before continuing at this moment. The following question should be asked, "May I please share with you how the Bible tells us that we can have eternal life?"

Important: Always show respect for your host.

10. The Presentation of the Gospel

Use a tract such as "**HOW TO HAVE ETERNAL LIFE**" or any other gospel presentation that is complete and easy to follow. Again, in non-Christian based cultures it may take weeks or even months to present these simple fundamental truths of the gospel. The issue is not how you do it but that these truths are in your presentation regardless of what approach you do use.

HOW TO HAVE ETERNAL LIFE

OBSERVE: These are the fundamentals of the gospel regardless of what culture. Culture can NOT change the gospel. It only dictates how we present the gospel. These basic truths will need to be shared somehow, somehow before a person can receive Christ. We suggest presenting these truths either in a long term Bible study format or by Storying. In Christian based cultures one can often present them

immediately after meeting a person. Regardless of what format one chooses to use in his presentation he does need to know these basic fundamental facts of the gospel.

1. The purpose of God for your life

The Bible says in **I John 5:13**, “I write these things to you who believe in the name of the Son of God so that you may know that you have eternal life.” The purpose of the verse is to show that God wants to give assurance of eternal life because of His love for man. Eternal life is two things:

- a) To know Jesus Christ and have His peace in your heart now while you live in this life. (John 17:3)
- b) To live with Jesus Christ in heaven for eternity after you die. (John 14:1-3)

According to the Bible, you can have assurance of eternal life today.

Observe: in Christian and non-Christian based cultures these terms will need to be clearly defined and this may take lots of time.

2. Your need

The Bible says in **Romans 3:23**, “for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God”. The purpose of this verse is to show that all of us are sinners. What is sin? Sin is disobeying God. For example, all of us have committed sins such as lying, anger, bitterness, greed, lust and pride. Do you recognize that you have sinned? What is the consequence of sin? The Bible says in **Romans 6:23**, “For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.”

The purpose of this verse is to show that all deserve death because of our sins. What is death? Death means to be separated from God in two ways.

First, death is separation from God now in this life on earth. It is a life without joy or peace in the soul. It is a life without assurance of eternal life and without Jesus in your heart. Separation from God leaves man with an empty and fearful heart.

Second, death is separation from God for eternity in hell. This is a life without Christ for all eternity. According to the Bible all of us deserve death, separation from God, because of our sins.

3. The provision of God

The Bible says in **Romans 5:8**, “But God demonstrates his own love to us in this: while we were still sinners, Christ died for us.” The purpose of this verse is to show that God loves us so much that He gave His son Jesus Christ to die for our sins. The only payment for sin is death. Jesus Christ was punished, judged and condemned to death on the cross to pay the penalty of sin in our place.

The death of Jesus was the only sacrifice that was sufficient to free man of the guilt of sin. Many people are trying to get to God through different ways: depending on their own good life or good works. They also may try to get to God through saints, idols, images, spirits or reincarnation.

Man’s own efforts have no power to purify man of his sins. The only way to have a relationship with God is through Jesus Christ. After Jesus Christ died on the cross for our sins, He arose from the dead, conquering death. He is alive and He wants to live in your heart. Do you believe that Jesus Christ is your only Lord, Savior and Mediator?

4. Your response

The Bible says in **Romans 10: 9**, “That if you confess with your mouth, ‘Jesus is Lord’, and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved.” The purpose of this verse is to show that to receive Jesus you must do two things:

- a) First, to receive Jesus you must confess Christ as your only Lord. You must abandon your sins and turn to follow Jesus. This means to turn the control of your life over to Christ. This is repentance.
- b) Second, to receive Jesus you must believe in your heart that Christ rose from the dead and is your only Savior. This means that you have

to stop putting your faith in other things like morality, good works, idols, images, saints or reincarnation and put your trust in Jesus Christ as your only Savior.

Are you ready to stop putting your faith in other things and give your life to Christ right now as your only Lord and Savior? The Bible says in **Romans 10:13**, “for, ‘Everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved.’” The purpose of this verse is to show that anyone that calls on the name of Jesus will be saved. This means that you can accept Jesus by faith right now in your heart.

Are you ready to give your life to Jesus and ask Him to enter in your life right now? If you are ready, say this prayer with all your heart to God.

“Lord, I am a sinner. I trust in you, Lord, as my only Lord, Savior and Mediator. I give my life to You. Come into my heart and save me right now. Transform me and take full control of my life. Amen.”

Do you believe that Jesus answered your prayer? Than where is Jesus right now? Are you saved?

VI. The Pioneer Evangelist and How to Begin A New Church

When the pioneer enters into a new city, he should keep in mind that the Holy Spirit will lead him to the people who are spiritually hungry. God is at work everywhere and He is preparing the hearts of some to be open to accept Christ, if only they had the opportunity to hear the gospel message personally. The evangelist must have total confidence in the Holy Spirit to do his job. His job is to prepare hearts. The evangelist’s job is simple—find those whom the Holy Spirit has prepared.

There are several things that will never change. The Bible message is always constant. Methodology is always changing. The methods presented in this book function under the leadership of the Holy Spirit. They are based on starting new and self-supporting churches under the leader-

ship of the Holy Spirit:

1. One that is self-governing under the leadership of God.
2. One that is self-supporting under the leadership of God.
3. One that is self-propagating under the leadership of God.

This is the goal. In order to arrive at this goal we use Biblical methods that are possible to everyone. The pioneer should choose an area, visit it, and meet the people in the streets, bars, houses, and anywhere else. A census may even be used.

It is the work of God to prepare the hearts of lost people. The pioneer evangelist can NOT do this. Only the Holy Spirit has the power to prepare someone and make his need for Christ known. It is the responsibility of the pioneer church planter to find the person or persons whose hearts have been prepared by the Holy Spirit. In other words we seek to find seekers.

Jesus called this person the man of peace in Luke 10:5-6 which says, “When you enter a house, first say, Peace to this house. If a man of peace is there, your peace will rest on him; if not, it will return to you”.

There is another principle at work at this point. It is the **oikos** principle. Acts 16:31 says, “Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and thou shalt be saved and thy **household**”. **Oikos means “household” or your “sphere of influence”**. Everyone in the entire world belongs to an oikos.

So, when you find the man of peace you will need to begin to get this person to introduce you to all the people in his oikos. You then penetrate his oikos. Also, every person in his oikos also has another oikos. For example, if a man of peace has ten people in his oikos then each of those ten may have another ten in their oikos. You can then penetrate those as well. So, you just follow the flow of oikoses. So, the key is to find the man of peace and then just follow the natural oikoses.

The pioneer should go into an area and simply say, “I am available to lead a Bible study, would you be interested?” If several people answer “yes”, allow them to suggest a place where they feel the Bible study should take place. Why do this? Every action should be taken from the very beginning to start a church that will become self-governed. Some Bible studies could be held underneath a tree, in

someone's home, or any public place. However, it is very advantageous to have the Bible study take place in the same place each week if possible. It eliminates misunderstandings concerning location. It is better if the pioneer does not start his work with children. After he has developed a strong nucleus, he can work with children. But in the beginning, his purpose should be to have Bible studies in various locations, and these should be as different and spread out as possible. The primary purpose of the pioneer is not to be a teacher of the Bible but to use the indirect method of Bible study as a leader. He will be sowing seeds. The Holy Spirit will produce the fruit in His time.

Rick Warren in his book, The Purpose Driven Church page 190-191 shares that he began the Saddleback Community Church, one of the largest in the United States by asking the following five questions to people in his community. This would be good to use in Christian based cultures:

1. In your opinion, what are the greatest needs that people have in this region? This question will open the door for you to begin a conversation.
2. Are you attending a church? (In a non Christian based culture you could just ask what religion do you have)
3. Why do you think most people do not attend a church? (This question is really asking them why they do not attend a church.)
4. If you were looking for a church to attend what type of church would you long for?
5. What could we do for you and what advice could you give for those who want to start a church in this area?

We would like to add just one question to this list:

6. Are you interested in having a Bible study in your home?

We also want to mention how responses to radio broadcasts, responses to tract distribution, or large events can be used to identify people who might be open to the gospel. These are additional ways but in all cases the

pioneer and his team should always ask those who express interest if they would be interested in having a home Bible study (besides personally asking people) to find those in whose hearts the Holy Spirit is working.

Notes:

VII. THE PIONEER EVANGELIST AND HOW TO LEAD BIBLE STUDY THROUGH THE INDIRECT METHOD - by Charles Brock

INTRODUCTION

This study, which will take around one hour to complete, was written to help anyone learn how to lead a Bible study using the Indirect Method. It will become clear that no formal education or special training is necessary to teach using this leadership method.

This leadership method can be applied to many different studies or books; however, we have prepared this study especially for those series of studies that relate to Pioneer Evangelism, which could be in this case, the Good News Bible studies, or the discipleship material.

HOW TO USE IT

There will be a line after each question. Below this line will be the answer to the question directly above. It is necessary to put a card or cover over the double lines and answer as you go down the page. After reading all the questions and filling in all of the empty spaces, move the card enough to see if you answered the question correctly. Follow this process all the way down the page.

REMEMBER NOT TO LOOK AT THE ANSWERS BEFORE FILLING IN THE SPACES.

PIONEER EVANGELISM

1. The object of this section is to IDENTIFY TWO THINGS THAT ARE INVOLVED IN INDIRECT LEADERSHIP.

Indirect Leadership is not the same as Direct Leadership.
Indirect Leadership involves two things:

- a. The leader gives direction to the group.
- b. There is participation to the group.

Indirect Leadership involves _____ by the leader and _____ by the group.

DIRECTION	PARTICIPATION
-----------	---------------

2. Indirect leadership does not require that a leader preach a sermon.
It requires from a leader to give _____

DIRECTION

3. When a leader does everything: talk, preach, sing, and pray, this is an example of:
- a. Direct Leadership
 - b. Indirect Leadership

DIRECT LEADERSHIP

4. The group should take part in the discussion. The leader should lead the group into the discussion of the study. One very important part of Indirect Leadership is that the group _____
- _____ .

PARTICIPATES

5. Indirect Leadership involves two things.
- a. _____
 - b. _____

DIRECTION BY THE LEADER PARTICIPATION OF THE GROUP

6. The object of this lesson is: **RELATE FIVE RULES** that should be followed when leading a Bible study group using the indirect method.
7. **THE LEADER SHOULD ENCOURAGE THE MEMBERS OF THE GROUP TO PARTICIPATE.**

Indirect Leadership is not possible when the leader does everything. In Indirect Leadership it is important that all the members be encouraged to_____.

PARTICIPATE

8. When the leader dominates all of the discussion, the members of the group do not have the opportunity to participate. When this occurs the leader is not practicing _____ leadership.

INDIRECT

9. Members of the class can participate by reading the question, giving the answer, or after they are saved, praying. Indirect Leadership requires that (which of these items) participate in the above examples.
- a. Only the leader
 - b. All the members

ALL THE MEMBERS

PIONEER EVANGELISM

10. Who participates when the indirect method is used to teach a Bible study? _____

ALL THE MEMBERS

11. PROVIDE A BOOK WITH FILL IN THE BLANK QUESTIONS AND ANSWERS OR ANY OTHER READING MATERIAL FOR THE MEMBERS. THIS WILL HELP GIVE THE TEACHER DIRECTION TO THE GROUP.

These materials also encourage the members to participate. An exercise book helps the teacher give _____ to the group. It also encourages the members to _____.

DIRECTION	PARTICIPATE
-----------	-------------

12. Following the lessons chosen by the leader will help him give direction to the group. If a Jehovah Witness who is participating in the meeting begins reading The Watchtower magazine. This means the leader is not giving proper _____ to the group.

DIRECTION

13. When the members follow an _____ book which uses fill in the blanks, they are not only led by the leader but also by the exercise _____.

EXERCISE	BOOK
----------	------

14. Some people are shy and others like to talk even if they don't know what they are talking about. Both of these types of people have participation problems. Having an exercise book with fill in the blanks or

any other good material will help correct the problem of _____.

PARTICIPATION

15. It is important that the leader give direction to the members and encourage their participation. This can be done when the leader provides an _____ or other reading materials.

EXERCISE BOOK

16. **PATIENCE IS REQUIRED BY THE LEADER WHEN LEADING A BIBLE STUDY OF NON-BELIEVERS.** Patience is especially necessary while using the indirect method. Some members of the group will want to participate a lot; others will not participate at all. A rule to be followed by the leader is to always be _____.

PATIENT

17. When the leader asks a question, the members of the group might be very slow in responding. The tendency of the leader might be to hurry them up and answer the question while the members are still thinking about the question. The leader must be _____.

PATIENT

18. It is required of the leader to be patient when a member of the class does not know how to find a chapter or a verse in the Bible. This type of patience is a necessary aspect if one wants to be a successful leader using the _____ METHOD.

INDIRECT

PIONEER EVANGELISM

19. Because people are often slow to participate the leader must be _____.

PATIENT

20. We have studied three rules or principles. They are:

- a. The leader should encourage all the members to participate.
 - b. He must provide an exercise book or any other reading material for the members.
 - c. The leader needs to practice patience.
- These rules are important when the leader is practicing _____ leadership.

INDIRECT

21. IN LEADING A BIBLE STUDY GROUP THE LEADER SHOULD PRACTICE A REPRODUCABLE LEADERSHIP.

Reproductive leadership means a type of leadership where the members of the class will soon be able to do the same thing that you are doing.

The leader should conduct himself in such a way that his leadership can be _____ by the members of the group.

REPRODUCED

22. A wise leader will think in terms of passing his responsibilities of leadership to others. The leader then will always need to be aware of how he is leading. Because he is an example for future _____.

LEADERS

23. A leader that desires to be in front of the group for as long as possible

is not interested in developing leaders to take his place. He is not interested in practicing _____ leadership.

REPRODUCTIVE

24. Reproductive Leadership must be: (check the correct answers)
- a. Exciting
 - b. Dependent on a good sound system.
 - c. Simple and clear.
 - d. Very formal with lots of detailed rules.
 - e. On a natural level for the members of the group.
-

SIMPLE AND CLEAR ON A NATURAL LEVEL FOR THE GROUP MEMBERS

25. A good leader will exert his leadership in such a way so that it can be _____ by future leaders.
-

REPRODUCED

26. We have learned that Indirect leadership involves participation from the members of the group. The group must depend on the Holy Spirit for its success. **ONLY THE HOLY SPIRIT IS CAPABLE OF BRINGING CONVICTION AND CONVERSION.**

The works of the Holy Spirit are _____ and _____.

CONVICTION CONVERSION

27. A strong leader can often times lead someone to change his religion, but conversion cannot be done without the help of the _____.
-

HOLY SPIRIT

28. Group leaders can sow the seeds of the Gospel of John Bible Studies. The Holy Spirit is the only one that can make these seeds produce. Therefore, group leaders have to depend on the _____.

HOLY SPIRIT

29. Who is capable of bringing true conviction and conversion of sin?
_____.

HOLY SPIRIT

30. We have studied five rules or principles that must be followed while using the Indirect Method of Leadership. List these five rules or principles:

- a. The leader should encourage_____ to participate.
- b. Provide an_____ or reading materials for the members.
- c. A leader should always be _____.
- d. A leader should practice _____ leadership.
- e. Only the _____ can bring true conviction and conversion.

-
- a. ALL THE MEMBERS
 - b. EXERCISE BOOK
 - c. PATIENCE
 - d. REPRODUCTIVE
 - e. HOLY SPIRIT

31. We have studied five things that a leader should do in indirect leadership. We will now study three things that a leader should never do while leading a Bible study group.
32. Frequently the leader of the Bible study group knows more about the Bible study than the members of the class. Sometimes a leader will be proud of this advantage. He will then feel that he must say everything he knows about every item discussed. This attitude is _____.
- a. Desirable
 - b. Undesirable in Indirect Leadership

UNDESIRABLE

33. A leader who is secure in his knowledge and relationship with God does not feel the need to prove _____ that he _____ about the subject.

ALL KNOWS

34. To be in silence and to listen is not a sign of ignorance on the part of the leader. When a leader is quiet it does not mean that he is _____.

IGNORANT

35. A leader should not feel the need on every subject to _____.
- a. Say all he knows
 - b. Be an authority
 - c. Listen

SAY ALL HE KNOWS

BE AN AUTHORITY

36. In a Bible study group, someone will emerge who will want to show off his intelligence. We call this person the “philosopher.” IT IS A

PIONEER EVANGELISM

WASTE OF TIME TO DEBATE WITH SUCH PEOPLE. These “philosophers” generally are _____. (choose more than one)

- a. Genuine seekers of the truth
- b. Trying to draw attention to themselves
- c. Like to talk

TRYING TO DRAW ATTENTION
TO THEMSELVES

LIKE TO
TALK

37. A “philosopher” that has never experienced true salvation cannot experience spiritual things. A leader should be willing to discuss which of these two subjects with this person

- a. How to be saved
- b. The Trinity

HOW TO BE SAVED

38. A “philosopher” will quickly change from one subject to another. He will then become the momentary leader of the study. The debate will bring _____ for the other members of the class

- a. Confusion
- b. Clarity

CONFUSION

39. A Bible study group will be confused if there is _____ with the philosophers.

DEBATE

40. Since indirect leadership means that many members of the class will participate THE LEADER MUST BE SURE THAT ONE PERSON DOES NOT DOMINATE THE DISCUSSION. When a person dominates the whole time this means that the leader is not exercising good _____ leadership.

INDIRECT

41. When a person talks the whole time it is difficult for many members of the group to _____.

PARTICIPATE

42. If good indirect leadership is practiced the responsibility of the _____ is to assure complete participation from the entire group.

LEADER

43. Indirect leadership does not permit _____ to dominate the discussion.
- a. One person
 - b. Two people
 - c. All the members

ONE PERSON

TWO PEOPLE

44. We have studied three things that a leader should never do. These three rules are:
- a. The leader should not feel that he must tell _____ he _____ about the subject at hand.
 - b. The leader should not _____ with philosophers.
 - c. The leader should not allow _____ to dominate the entire study.

a. EVERYTHING

KNOWS

b. DEBATE

c. ONE PERSON

PIONEER EVANGELISM

45. Now we will study two reasons why the indirect method of leadership is a good method to use while starting new churches.
46. When we use the indirect method, IT IS EASIER TO TRANSFER THE RESPONSIBILITIES OF LEADERSHIP TO THE OTHER MEMBERS OF THE GROUP. It is the simplest answer in providing leadership to a group through Bible studies that will one-day build a church. One of the main characteristics of a wise leader is his ability to _____ the leadership.

TRANSFER

47. A leader who is a pastor of another group (church) may find it difficult to continue meeting with the group that he is trying to start. For this reason it is important to find a new leader for this group, and it is natural that the leader comes from the _____ itself.

GROUP

48. Because a wise leader will use the indirect method from the beginning of the group's meetings, it is natural for the members to participate while the group is still developing. It will then be _____ that some of the members will become leaders.

NATURAL

49. Because all of the members are encouraged to participate from the beginning of the Bible study, it will be natural for the members to continue to _____. One or more members will then become _____.

PARTICIPATE

LEADERS

50. If a leader can not or will not always continue to be the leader of a certain Bible study group, how can he plan for the future?

He should _____ the leadership to the members of the group.

TRANSFER

51. When you use the type of indirect leadership that we have studied in this lesson YOU WILL BEGIN AND LEAD NEW GROUPS THAT ARE NOT LIMITED TO AN EXPERIENCED LEADER, TRAINING OR MONEY.

This means that many people are able _____ new groups.

LEAD

52. A leader that is a new Christian can still lead a Bible study group even if he is not very _____ .

EXPERIENCED

53. Write true, "T," or false, "F," in the blank spaces:

- a. _____ A person who has been through extensive seminary training is capable of leading a home Bible study group.
b. _____ A farmer who has little training can successfully lead a home Bible study group.

BOTH ANSWERS ARE "TRUE"

54. Who has enough money to began leading a home Bible study group?
(Chose one or more of the alternatives)

- a. A lawyer
b. A carpenter
c. A doctor

- d. A teacher
- e. A factory worker

FARMER/ CARPENTER/ DOCTOR/ TEACHER/ FACTORY WORKER

55. According to what we have learned, Indirect Leadership is the best leadership with which to start home Bible study groups which will result in churches. It is a good method because:

- a. It is easy to _____ the leadership to another member of the group.
- b. Many people can start these groups because a person does not need much _____.

a. TRANSFER

b. EXPERIENCE, TRAINING, AND MONEY

56. REVIEW OF WHAT WE HAVE LEARNED

I. Indirect Leadership involves two things:

- 1. _____ of the leader
- 2. _____ of the members

II. Five things to remember while leading a group Bible study are:

- 1. The leader should encourage the _____ of all the _____
- 2. Provide an _____ book or any other good _____ materials.
- 3. A leader should practice his _____
- 4. A leader should practice _____ leadership.
- 5. Only the _____ can bring true conviction and conversion from sin.

III. Write out two reasons why the indirect method of leadership is good method for starting new churches.

Answers to the Review

I.

1. DIRECTION
2. PARTICIPATION

II.

1. PARTICIPATION MEMBERS
2. EXERCISE READING
3. PATIENCE
4. REPRODUCTIVE
5. HOLY SPIRIT

III.

1. The leader can easily and quickly transfer the leadership to the members of the group.
2. A leader can begin a new home Bible study group even if he has little experience, training or money.

VIII. THE PIONEER EVANGELIST AND HOW TO LEAD A HOME BIBLE STUDY WITHOUT BIBLE STUDY MATERIALS

- by Thomas Wade Akins

The key to studying God's Word is the Holy Spirit. Jesus said in John 16:12-14, **“But when He, the Spirit of Truth, comes, He will guide you into all truth. He will not speak on His own; He will speak only what He hears, and He will tell you what is yet to come. He will bring glory to me by taking what is mine and making it**

known to you.” Jesus is truth, and the Holy Spirit is the one who reveals truth in your heart.

Have you ever been reading the Bible and suddenly a verse of Scripture just suddenly is illuminated in your heart and the Holy Spirit speaks a truth to you? This has happened to me on many occasions. Once I was walking through some very difficult and hard times. I was in a pit of almost total darkness. Yet, at the bottom of the pit was light—the light of Jesus. I began reading the Word to get a word from God. I began to read Isaiah, and I as read chapter 43 God’s Holy Spirit suddenly illuminated deep within my soul verse two which says, **“when you pass through the rivers, they will not sweep over you, When you walk through the fire, you will not be burned”**. When God spoke this truth into my heart a great peace flooded my soul. I still had to walk through many dark days of trial by fire but I knew I would not get burned because God had spoken to me personally His truth.

It is important for the leader to remember that he is NOT teaching the Bible study but leading it. He is leading in a way that requires the participants to participate. He does not read the verse but asked someone in the group to read it. He does not tell them what truths are in the verse, but he asks questions to help the group to discover the truths. He does not apply the verse for them but asked them to give their ideas on how to personalize and apply the verse. As we lead a group in Bible study, our objective is to hear God speak truth through His word. I would like to suggest the following steps:

Step 1: The leader of the group will select a passage to be studied. He can begin with verse one of a book and study every verse of every chapter. For example, you can begin with the Gospel of John, chapter one, verse one.

Step 2: The leader will ask someone in the group to read the first verse.

Step 3: The leader will reread the verse using modern and simple language. In other words he will paraphrase the verse. He will read the verse in a very simple form.

Step 4: After reading the verse, the leader then will ask questions to search for spiritual truths in the verse. Ask these type of questions: who, what, when, where, why, and how.

Ask these types of questions:

1. What does this verse say about God?
2. What does this verse say about Jesus?
3. What does this verse say about sin?
4. What does this verse say about obedience?
5. What does this verse say about me?
6. What spiritual truth or truths are in this verse?

Step 5: The leader then should show the group other passages or verses in the Bible that relate to the truths discovered in this verse. In other words, show the group other passages in the Bible that will illustrate and illuminate the truth in the verse.

Step 6: The leader then should apply the verse. Make the verse personal by placing your name in the verse and by placing personal pronouns in the verse. Discuss each truth in a personal manner and apply it to each person in the group. Ask this question to each person: how does the truth in this verse apply to you? What is this verse saying to you personally and allow each person in your group to respond.

Step 7: After following this procedure with verse one, continue to verse two and use this method to study every verse in the entire book, verse by verse.

Step 8: At the end of the study, lead the group in prayer and pray about the spiritual truths discovered in the passage studied.

EXAMPLE

Step 1: Select the book or passage. For our purpose we will select the Gospel of John.

Step 2: Ask someone in the group to read the first verse. John 1:1, **“In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God”**.

Step 3: Paraphrase the verse. This verse is saying that in the beginning was the Creator, and he was both with God and was God.

Step 4: Questions:

1. What does this verse say about God? He is from the beginning. He is the beginning. He is the Word.
2. What does this verse say about Jesus? If you read verse 14 you will see that the Word is Jesus. Therefore, Jesus Christ is God.

Step 5: Read other related verses. John 1:14 says, **“The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. We have seen his glory, the glory of the One and Only, who came from the Father, full of grace and truth.”**

Ask as many questions you can think of and let the group answer them—not the leader.

1. Who became flesh? Jesus
2. Who dwelt among us? Jesus
3. Who saw his glory? John, the person who wrote this book.
4. What did John see in Jesus? His glory.
5. What does “his glory” mean? It means that he was exalted and honored.
6. What else did John see in Jesus? He came from the Father.
7. What else did John see in Jesus? He was full of grace.
8. What is grace? Grace is God doing things for us that we do not deserve. Jesus is grace.
9. What is truth? Truth is the opposite of a lie. Jesus is full of truth in who He is and in everything He said.

Step 6: Apply the verse. What does this verse teach us? What **spiritual truths** are in this verse? Make them personal. The leader should allow the group to respond.

Some truths in the verse:

1. God is in the beginning.
 2. He had no beginning and no end.
 3. He is eternal.
 4. Jesus is God.
 5. Jesus is the Creator of the World.
 6. Jesus created me (making it personal).
 7. Jesus is full of grace and truth. Jesus gave me what I do not deserve.
- Jesus teaches me what is true. (Remember to use personal pronouns.)

Step 7: Read the next verse and use this same procedure. Continue this procedure through the entire book week after week after week. After you finish John, then select another book and use the same procedure.

Step 8: Close in prayer but pray about the spiritual truths God revealed to you and the group through the passage studied.

IX. The Pioneer Evangelist and How to Lead the Good News Bible Studies

IMPORTANT: It is very important that you understand about the materials used in this ministry and the references to them used in this training manual. We are repeating this notice for a second time so there will not be any confusion. Any good evangelistic follow-up and discipleship material will work. The person presenting the gospel and doing the follow-up work is more important than the materials. When this program was developed in Brazil, the following materials were used:

- Gospel Tract: *How to Have Eternal Life* by Wade Akins.
- Basic Evangelistic Bible Studies: *Gospel of John Bible Studies* by Dr. Waylon Moore.
- Simplified Evangelistic Studies: *New Life* by Wade Akins. For people who are not good readers. These studies have the same information as the gospel tract above, but have been divided into seven lessons.

- Basic Evangelistic Bible Stories: *The Good News of Jesus* by Christy A. Brawner
- Immediate Follow-up Sheet: *Six Truths for New Converts* by Wade Akins. To be done within 48 hours after the person's conversion.
- Discipleship Bible Studies: You will need to select discipleship study material which will allow the new believers to learn about basic doctrines of Christianity such as baptism, tithing, Christian growth, and the like. This type of material is used to support and encourage new believers to mature in Christ. The storying material, *Beginning a New Life in Christ* by Cristy A. Brawner, is included in this book.

As you study through this manual you will note references to these materials. However, you can use other materials if you desire. For the purpose of this training we make reference to the "How to Have Eternal Life" gospel tract. Other examples of the same type of material are The "Four Spiritual Laws", by Campus Crusade for Christ; and "Steps to Peace With God", by Billy Graham. You may use the gospel tract of your choice every time you see a reference to the one provided in this book. The same principle is applicable to any of the other materials listed above.

Charles Brock, missionary in the Philippines and author of this method suggests the following steps:

1. The First Meeting

- A. The Pioneer should take the following to the meeting:
 - a. The New Testament
 - b. A pen
 - c. sheet of paper
 - d. A sheet of choruses that relate to the study
 - e. The track "How to Have Eternal Life", "Good News" studies, "Good News" stories or whatever study material he plans to use.
- B. The pioneer should present himself and emphasize that he is a Bible study leader.

- C. The pioneer should ask everyone to sign his or her name on a piece of paper, along with his or her age and birth date. Explain to the people that this list is for you to pray for each member of the group, also explain that at the next meeting you will bring a Gospel of John for every member of the group. This list should be put in the “daily” section of your prayer notebook.
- D. The pioneer should then introduce several choruses, and ask them if they would like to learn them. Let the group decide. If they choose to sing the songs, teach them one or two good choruses.
- E. The pioneer should choose one of the choruses as a theme chorus.
- F. The pioneer should ask the group members of any specific needs or prayer request in their lives. Then pray with them for these request and make a commitment to pray for these request throughout the week.
- G. The pioneer should give each person an evangelistic track. This is for them to read at home.
- H. Only spend one hour for each meeting; after one hour it may be best to leave and go to another scheduled location.

2. The Second Meeting

- A. The pioneer should bring the following:
 - a. A Bible
 - b. Copies of the Gospel of John (take the number you think that will need)
 - c. The “Good News” studies or “Good News” stories.
 - d. A sheet of songs
 - e. The track “HOW TO HAVE ETERNAL LIFE”, or any other evangelistic tract

If you have twenty to fifty people attend your second meeting; you normally can expect half this number to continue through until the very end. If the seven “Gospel of John Bible Studies”

lessons are taught to twenty people, this is enough to start a church.

The second meeting will require more patience on the part of the pioneer than will any other meeting. A lot of patience is required with those who know nothing about the Bible. The pioneer must show every single member of the group how to find chapters and verses in his Bible.

B. The Order of the Program

- a. Sing three songs
- b. Sing the theme song
- c. Collect the song sheets
- d. Distribute the Good News Studies lesson. (only give out the first lesson)
- e. Distribute the gospel of John if you are using the John series. This will not be necessary if you are using the Storying material.
- f. Study the lesson using the indirect method if you are using the John series.
- g. At the end ask the question, "Does anyone have any questions?" If there are no questions, close the meeting with a prayer.
- h. Close with a time of intercessory prayer.

3. The Sixth and Seventh Meetings

The sixth lesson of the "Good News" studies has an invitation (if you use the Storying lessons the invitation is in the seventh lesson.). The leader may also use the tract "How to Have Eternal Life" or any other appropriate material to explain the gospel and invite the members of the group to accept Jesus as their Lord if he needs to.

After the final lesson it will be time for the group to make a decision. The pioneer should ask if they wish to continue studying together. If the answer is "yes" he should recommend the Follow-up material. A great change will occur at this point. The pioneer should suggest that all groups meet in one place if possible.

For all those who made a decision to give their lives to Christ, the

pioneer will lead them in the “Six Truths for New Converts” study. This study can be done in the individual groups or in the first meeting once all the groups are meeting together in one place.

X. The Pioneer Evangelist and How to Lead the Follow-Up Bible Studies

1. A Decisive Point

The pioneer has arrived at a very decisive point. He will now begin a meeting with all of the people who have finished the Good News Studies. At this point he should do two things:

- A. Start the study of the Follow-up material.
- B. Begin four to six more groups using the Good News Studies series with new prospects. The pioneer should lead the Follow-up material using the indirect method. The pioneer can use any material he desires but we recommend using the Storying material: *Beginning a New Life*.
- C. If the pioneer has not taught the SIX TRUTHS FOR THE NEW CONVERT by Pastor Thomas Akins in the eighth meeting he should do this before starting the Follow-up material.

2. The Third Week

This is one more decisive week. The pioneer should let the group choose a local leader who will lead the discussion for the following week. The pioneer should not try to choose the leader for the group but make himself available to give guidance in order to avoid doctrinal error.

3. The Fourth and Fifth Weeks

The local leader will lead the study and the pioneer, without interrupting, will only be a listener. The local leader will continue to lead the studies in place of the pioneer.

4. The Sixth Week

This week the pioneer should find a reason why he can not attend the meeting, but he must explain that the meeting must go on anyway.

XI. AN INTRODUCTION TO BIBLE STORYING

By: J.O. Terry

Bible Storying, What is it? —Bible storying is the intentional use of Bible stories for the purposes of evangelism, church planting, discipleship, leadership training, and ministry. Bible storying is distinguished from other forms of Bible teaching by its reliance upon the preserved biblical narrative or story. Bible storying is often used with various forms of instructional teaching including exposition, inductive sessions and simple application to today's life.

The Bible is 60-70% narrative format in content. It contains *explicit stories* which are those that are well defined and located in one or more references as a story. Examples of this are the stories of Adam and Eve, Cain and Abel, the Flood, Abraham's offering of Isaac and many others. In fact there are several hundred stories of which some are very long covering several chapters of the Bible and others are very short complete in only a few verses.

There are *implied stories* in which all the details are included in the Bible but not in one place or not written as a story. The creation of the Spirit World is one such story if you accept the accounts in Ezekiel 28 and Isaiah 14 as referring to Satan's first estate and subsequent fall. In Psalm 148:2, 5 plus a number of other references there begins to emerge a story of the creation of the spirits, which we know as angels, and those that became demons. There are other stories related to Paul's letters in the Epistles as Paul addressed the issues such as the young man's sin in the Corinthian church, improper observance of the Lord's Supper and the straying of the Galatians due to false teachers.

Many of the stories were told as stories by Jesus or are the stories of what Jesus did as he taught, healed, forgave sin, brought peace, and fed hungry people. Jesus began to teach in parables because of the opposi-

tion of the religious leaders (see Matthew 13:10-13 and Mark 4:1-2, 33-34). Later Jesus did explain to his disciples the meaning of the stories he told the public.

Why use stories? —There are several reasons why Bible stories should be used even though other forms of witness and discipling presentations could be used.

1. Many of the unreached peoples of the world live in *oral cultures* where people share news *orally*, learn new things *orally*, and teach others *orally*. In these cultures stories are utilized as a form in which the important things may be easily remembered in the stories. Oral culture people prefer stories as their medium of instruction even if they could learn by other means. They often describe people by telling stories about them. One way to teach about God is to tell stories about God and His work. The stories may be told and retold by those who hear them.

2. Many prefer oral culture because they cannot read and write. While some in the culture may read and write, others, typically older adults, cannot read or write at all. Even the readers may be handicapped in what they can read and understand. Overcoming the literacy barrier then is one powerful reason to use stories to inform and instruct a people.

In some instances the Bible may be available in the regional market language that is used for trade and travel but not in the spoken heart language of the people. This means that many religious vocabulary words are not known or not commonly used by the people.

3. Stories are used in a Bible storying strategy for evangelism particularly because either of resistance to traditional evangelistic presentations or outright hostility to the Gospel. There is no intent to trick the listeners into hearing what they do not want to hear. But if the Bible stories are entertaining to them and they are attentive to hearing them, the Holy Spirit can use what the people are hearing to convict them of sin and need for a Savior.

Another reason for using Bible storying is that of giving the people an *Oral Bible*. What is an oral Bible? It is a Bible in stories, proverbs and memory verses that the people can remember and retell to others. It becomes a living Bible in their hearts. Incidentally, we all have an oral Bible of sorts in our hearts as we can recall a significant amount of the Bible orally from the stories we have heard as children, sermons we have heard and our own Bible reading and study.

What forms of Bible storying are used?

The most common form we are all familiar with is the *topical story*, which is usually related to a Bible lesson topic. Topical stories are often used to instruct and disciple and are a good way to give corrective teaching as several story lessons are brought to bear upon an issue. Topical stories work best with people who already are familiar with the stories and where there is general acceptance of the Bible and its teaching as being relevant to their lives. One of the disadvantages of topical teaching is that, unless several stories and lessons are used, the stories may be reinterpreted or restructured negatively to support an erroneous view. In stories that dealt exclusively with God's judgment upon a sinful people it could give the impression that God is an angry God that looks for opportunity to destroy people. These stories would need to be balanced with stories that explored the grace of God in providing an escape from the punishment of sin if the sinner would believe him and do what God told them to do. Topical stories are best used for discipling and training leadership.

Chronologically arranged stories are those that are used in a timeline chronology so that each story leads into the following story or in some way prepare for the following stories. When the New Tribes missionaries were popularizing chronological teaching it was basically a chronological teaching by exposition. That is, they taught through the Bible *story* following a chronological timeline and used the method that most Western trained missionaries would use—exposition verse by verse giving interpretation of what the Bible taught, but making no effort to preserve the Bible stories as *narratives*. This doesn't mean what they did was wrong, it just has certain limits and may not be as field reproducible as oral culture methods involving

storying the Bible.

Why follow a chronological timeline?

The main reason is that it follows the pattern or order in which the stories happened, it is therefore a natural organization of the stories. Oral culture people like to begin at the beginning and tell the stories as they happened. That is how they remember the stories in the order stories happened. Jumping around in the order of stories can be very confusing to them.

There is another reason for keeping the chronological organization of stories. With those hostile to the Gospel in which the Gospel challenges their beliefs, it is important to have the stories to lean upon one another. That is, a group of stories, or a *cluster of stories*, that are related tend to lock in the truth better. An example of this are the stories related to God's promise to Abraham being carried out through the descendants of Abraham beginning with Isaac and not Ishmael. The themes, which run through the stories as promises, actors in the stories, etc., all link the stories together making it much more difficult to change a story even if you don't like what it teaches.

It is important to prepare a people for hearing the good news of a Savior. The best preparation for this is the bad news of man's sinful condition, accountability to God, and his inability to save himself from God's wrath. So the Old Testament stories make the best backdrop for presenting the stories of Jesus as fulfillment of all prophecy and promise.

There are two types of storying that are more often used in either acclimatizing a people for the hearing the Gospel.

One is the *situational story* that is effective in ministry to individuals and families. It is simply a story, which is chosen and told as fitting to some circumstance in which the Bible storyer has opportunity to use it. A typical use of situational storying is an invitation to enter a home to pray for a family member or family need. This is opportunity to lift up Jesus before the people in a quickly told story before offering the requested prayer. Then the storyer offers to come again and tell more of the stories about Jesus from God's Word. Bible stories may of course be used in wed-

dings, funerals, and any other occasion when a story fits the occasion.

The other type is called *fast-tracking the Gospel* and will be covered later.

Where to begin when preparing to story the Bible?

There are two essential things for the storyer to know. This is assuming that he or she already has a working knowledge of God's Word.

First the storyer needs to be aware of the *basic Bible truths* which a person needs to hear and understand in order to be open to salvation. There is a suggested list of some twelve truths that need to be considered by the storyer in his preparation. Not all of these truths will need equal treatment as some may already be understood or at least not challenged by the people's existing belief system. Others may need extensive treatment as the people might have strongly embedded beliefs and practices in their culture. One basic starting point is the issue of the sovereignty of God that includes His sovereignty over the spirit world as well as the visible world and all its people. Others will have to do with local concepts of sin and how that sin may be atoned. Others have to do with the afterlife, its nature, and who goes where. The greatest is that God himself provided the needed Savior according to his promise. Here is a suggested list:

Basic Bible Truths Leading To Salvation

1. God alone is Sovereign, acting in history and communicating with man.
2. God is all-powerful, all knowing, the source of grace (love, peace, mercy, forgiveness, salvation, provision for man's needs).
3. God communicates through his Word and is faithful to keep it.
4. God loves man and wants fellowship with him.
5. God is righteous, hating sin.
6. God punishes sin by death (separation from God).
7. Man is accountable to God for all he says and does.

8. Man is a sinner separated from God by his sins.
9. Man can do nothing to save himself from God's righteous judgement.
10. Man can approach (have fellowship with) God only through a perfect (acceptable) sacrifice. This involves faith and trust in God.
11. Jesus the Son, the One sent by God, is the only perfect sacrifice.
12. Salvation involves repentance and faith in God's provision in Jesus as Saviour and Lord.

The list of Basic Bible Truths gives criteria for an outline of a ***Core Set of Stories*** that deal with the truths. This is a list of possible stories that could be used for evangelizing when the storyer knows nothing about the worldview of the target people. This list is a good beginning point for building a set of Bible story lessons for evangelizing. There may be a need for substitutions on some stories to others more appropriate for a people. The list does not take into account stories, which may be needed, to bridge between major stories nor to deal with certain Bible truths that need more attention and depth in teaching. **Again, this list is a suggested list of typical stories, which may be used to cover the Bible truths:**

CORE STORY LIST

1. Creation of the world
2. Creation of man
3. The first sin and judgment of Adam and Eve
4. Judgment of a sinful world in Noah's day
5. God's promise to Abraham—a descendant through which God would bless all people
6. God provides the substitute sacrifice for Isaac
7. The Passover—the blood and the lamb
8. God gives His holy Law—the Ten Commandments
9. The Sacrifice System—shedding of sacrificial blood to cover sin
10. The Prophets' message and promise of a Redeemer who would suffer for man
11. Birth of Jesus according to prophecy

12. Baptism of Jesus—"Behold the Lamb of God", testimony of John and the Spirit
 13. Jesus and Nicodemus—"You must be born again"
 14. Jesus has authority to forgive sin—paralyzed man and four friends
 15. Jesus has power over nature—Calms the Sea
 16. Jesus has authority over demons—Gadarene Demoniac
 17. Jesus is the resurrection—Jesus raises Lazarus to life
 18. Abraham, Lazarus and the rich man—Man must believe the message of the prophets in this life
 19. The Last Supper—"This is my broken body and blood shed for you"
 20. Jesus is betrayed, arrested, falsely accused, tried and sentenced to death according to prophecy
 21. The crucifixion, decision for and against Jesus, "It is finished"
 22. The resurrection and appearance to disciples and followers
 23. Jesus returns to the Father, the Ascension
- Following are optional stories for certain spiritual worldviews—*
24. Jesus the true High Priest (Heb 8-9), an advocate before the Father making intercession for believer's sins (Rom 8:34; Heb 7:25)
 25. Return of Jesus to receive believers unto himself, to judge and punish unbelievers, Satan and the evil spirits thus fulfilling all promises and prophecies.

The obvious weakness of this list of core stories is that many important belief issues of the target people may not be addressed sufficiently. In some cultures people may have an understanding of their sinfulness and a desire to be accepted by God and included in His family. In other cultures the people may have very faulty concepts of the severity of sin and its consequences and further be offended by anything which ties God to man implying that man can have fellowship with a transcendent God. Stories about Jesus' ministry are chosen to qualify Jesus as having authority and power like the Father.

The need for an adequate understanding of a people's worldview.—

The Bible storyer, as well, as anyone seeking to evangelize a people must understand some of the basics of their worldview. This is important because in the worldview are the concepts of how a people relate to the deities that control their lives, how they view themselves, what is wrong or harmful and how they atone for wrongdoing. The important distinction to make is that the worldview must be known, not so that the storyer can simply engage in apologetics to combat erroneous beliefs, but so that the storyer can engage a people at their point of greatest spiritual need while dealing with beliefs that hinder an understanding and acceptance of the Gospel. The best way to explain this is to say that a people's worldview must *inform* and *instruct* the use of Bible truths in witness. This means the choice of stories to be used and the themes to be developed in the story sessions is related to both the Bible truths and relevant worldview issues. Knowing their worldview also helps the storyer to know certain stories which may need to be avoided initially as these may be misunderstood or increase the hostility to the Gospel.

There is not space here to go into a full explanation of how to assess a people's worldview. **But there are some helpful categories related to worldview which the storyer should know. These are:**

Perceived need—Where a people see themselves as needy, especially in the spirit realm.

Change points in their culture—This is where change has been occurring in the recent past, perhaps as the Holy Spirit has been preparing a people for the Gospel, where there is ongoing change among a people—their present value system, and areas where future change is likely due to circumstances among the people and their environment.

Barriers to the Gospel—These are both active barriers like hostility for whatever reason and other barriers, typically cultural which hinder hearing and acting upon the Gospel.

Bridges to the Gospel—These are areas in their culture in which due to existing beliefs and expectations there is an openness to hear the Gospel and to relieve existing spiritual fears and uncertainties.

To explore these there are various instruments such as questionnaires which suggest issues and facts to explore about a people. Beyond having this information there is a need to prioritize the information so that only the major issues are dealt with in the evangelizing effort. It is generally found

that a short list of only 10-12 are real barriers which need forceful addressing. Later in choosing Bible stories, multiple stories will be needed for the greater worldview barrier issues. Save lesser issues for later discipling lessons and for teaching to mature believers after an adequate biblical base has been established for reference.

Following is a list of key issues to explore in determining a working worldview for Bible storying.

1. Knowledge of the Bible and attitude toward it as an authoritative source of truth.
2. General conception of Christians and whether this a desirable lifestyle.
3. Understanding of the sovereignty of God and His attributes, His Oneness.
4. Understanding of sin, its origin and spread, prevalence among all mankind.
5. Consequences of sin, how may it be atoned for, role of sacrifice. Is forgiveness practiced?
6. Role of spirit world and its relationship to world of living. Fears, taboos, appeasement.
7. Attitude toward death, the afterlife, places of blessedness or retribution and conditions for entering. Can one leave after “paying for sin” or escape punishment in some way?
8. Knowledge of Jesus, who he is, the circumstances of his coming, his relationship to God.
9. The ministry of Jesus—his teaching, healing, forgiving, restoring to life, implications.
10. The betrayal, suffering and death of Jesus as a substitute sacrifice for sin.
11. Any open or hidden barriers to hearing the Gospel, understanding it, and acting upon it.
12. Any bridges (other than the above) such as where God is at work preparing a people.
13. The role of intermediaries in beseeching the deity, changing life circumstances.
14. Is literacy a factor in sharing God’s Word? Is the Bible in their heart

language?

15. What is their preferred mode of learning and teaching others—oral culture? Other?
16. Where and when is true teaching conducted? Who may be recognized as a teacher?

There are many other possible questions for exploring their spiritual worldview and constructing a worldview with implications for evangelizing and discipling a people.

Preparing a strategy for Bible storying.

Following is a helpful organization of the Bible into a strategy for evangelizing, affirming new believers, planting a church, discipling new believers, and bringing closure to the Bible story. This strategy should be seamless in that each part should flow into the next and it should be invisible, that is, done without announcing what is to happen next. This strategy for evangelizing and church planting has grown out of experience in a number of countries where Bible storying is used. And it takes into account the natural organization of the Bible content. The strategy is most helpful for breaking down the task into objectives which can be addressed. The Bible truths and worldview issues together point to criteria for choosing Bible stories and themes to be developed in each session with the people. This strategy organization is only a suggested one which may be modified as needed. Each major objective has a range of stories that are helpful in addressing the issues. **Here are the objectives and suggested range of stories:**

Evangelism Track—Genesis to Acts 1 (Creation to the Ascension)

Affirming or Review Track—Genesis to Acts 1 (Review only of essential stories)

Church Planting Track—Acts 1 to Acts 12 (The characteristics of the New Testament Church)

Discipling or Characterization Track—Acts 13-28, selected Epistles (Establishing and maturing believers toward the whole measure of the fullness of Christ)

End Times Track—Revelation and other passages related to the End Times (To bring a note of victory and celebration to the church and a final warning to unbelievers)

These five tracks cover the basic Bible story and contribute to an initial Oral Bible for a people. The tracks may be paused for more indepth coverage of any issues as well as repeated if response is slow in coming. The most critical track will be the Evangelism Track because it is the one at which a people are first engaged and initial worldview issues are challenged.

After an initial coursing through the Bible it is possible then to continue the church strengthening objective by going back through the Bible following the same chronological pattern and adding new stories in the timeline. These stories may be along a topic such as love, forgiveness, worship, etc., they may be on leadership or any other aspect of need among a people. The chronological presentation preserves the organization and makes it easier to include new stories by referring to where they fit in. Their objective is to give the people a Bible in their hearts they can remember, live by and share with others.

The Bible stories are presented during storying sessions.

There are four typical parts to each storying session. Following is an idealized storying session with suggested parts. How each part is conducted must be determined by the storyer and their knowledge of the people.

Typically the Bible storying session is NOT a worship service but a teaching time. If prayer is used keep it brief and directed to God's blessing His Word and opening the people's hearts to understanding it. Resist efforts of those with knowledge of Christian worship to force it into a worship service. Later, when there has been positive response to the Gospel elements of worship may be introduced as there is now reason to worship because of forgiveness of sin and the new relationship to God through Jesus.

1. Pre-story dialogue:

- 1.1 Introductory greeting according to local culture and social

practice.

- 1.2 Inquire about recent events in the community. Look for tie-in to recent lesson topics and current lesson.
- 1.3 Recall/review previous stories and the biblical truths in them with special attention to those relating to the current lesson theme.
- 1.4 Ask questions to build anticipation, to arouse curiosity. At this point there are no “right or wrong” answers, but do note what is said and pick up on it in the post-story time. These questions are like adding a little “salt” to make the people “thirsty” for the story.
- 1.5 Review any “bridging” or “linking” stories necessary to set the stage for or to get into the current story. (Ex: Moses’ killing the Egyptian causes him to leave Egypt and live in the desert where he meets God.)
- 1.6 If applicable, give a Listening Task—to listen for certain things in the story to promote an active participation and arouse interest. It is “playing the game.”

2. Read from the Bible:

- 2.1 Pick up the Bible and hold it in your hand (or however a holy book is held).
- 2.2 Read from the a part of the story to “anchor” the story in the Bible.
- 2.3 Continue to hold the Bible after finishing the reading.

3. Tell the story:

- 3.1 Tell the story. Holding the open Bible signals the story is coming from the Bible.
- 3.2 Tell the story as a *story* and not as a description of what God and the people did and said.
- 3.3 Use summary statements as needed to bridge time gaps and to link episodes.
- 3.4 Tell the story accurately but interestingly, preserving the biblical rhythm.
- 3.5 At the end of the story—STOP! (Know where and how you

are going to stop.) Put down the Bible.

4. Lead listeners to discover the truths in the story:

- 4.1 Ask someone to retell the story in their own words. (If you get a poor or inaccurate retelling, ask if someone else would like to tell the story. Keep fishing until you get a good retelling. If not, then retell it again yourself. Tell the listeners perhaps they would like to hear it again.)
- 4.2 Let the listeners respond to the Listening Task if used. (Fish for a good answer.)
- 4.3 Continue the Discovery Time with easy self-evident questions and move to ones that provoke thought. From these move to questions that have a personal application.
- 4.4 Where there appears to be uncertainty in answering, probe tactfully with more questions. Feel free to retell the story if necessary or to review portions of the story if that is acceptable to them.
- 4.5 Handle incorrect answers in a culturally sensitive manner. (Thank you, would someone else like to answer.)
- 4.6 Don't entertain questions about yet-to-be-revealed truth. (Visiting Christians can really pose a problem here. Tell them you haven't yet come to that part of the story. When you do they will get their answer.)
- 4.7 Defer answering questions you don't know the answers to—you will look in God's Word for an answer. (Probably you would know the answer. This models for those you are training not to "wing it" if they don't know. Defer answering until they have looked in God's Word or asked someone who does know.)
- 4.8 Be sensitive for the appropriate time to stop the session.
- 4.9 Use a memory verse to sum up the lesson and to give the listeners a verse to hide in their hearts.
- 4.10 Tell them a story about yourself, your family or your people.

Remember this is only a suggested ideal story session. Where there is hostility or suspicion it may only be possible to ask a few rhetorical

questions and then tell the story without any discussion, trusting the power of the Word to begin changing attitudes. As trust grows and listeners do ask questions, answer them by referring to the stories—the story answers the question. In time there may be openness for a more typical teaching session.

A review of the planning process for chronological Bible storying.—Here is a review of the basic suggested steps for preparing to engage your people by storying the Bible:

- 1. Consider the Basic Biblical Truths for Salvation.** Be very sure in your own mind what the Bible teaches about sin, forgiveness and salvation. Go over the list of Bible truths and reword them as your own.
- 2. Examine your people's worldview keeping in mind that you are looking for any barriers to the Gospel.** There are many interesting things to know about a people—What do you NEED to know before beginning to witness to say the right thing and to keep from saying the wrong thing? Make a list of major barriers and any helpful bridges.
- 3. Write out some criteria (or objectives)** which will guide you in selecting stories and identifying themes in the stories for emphasis in teaching.
- 4. Select your stories beginning with a model story list or Core Story List and changing it to fit your teaching objectives.** Remember to keep them in obvious chronological order.
- 5. Adjust your story list** to fit the time frame when you can meet with the people. Do you need to cut it short because of planting season, rainy season when the roads are impassable? Other factors including your own schedule.
- 6. Prepare your stories** first from the Bible and then develop a lesson around them to highlight the story and draw out its message to the listeners.

7. **Test your stories** on a friendly informant or a small group you know well. Make necessary cultural adjustments and others edits as needed for clarity.
8. **Make arrangements** with proper authorities for teaching in their jurisdiction. Select a place accessible to the whole community unless there is some reason not to. Remember, the goal is to involve the whole community if possible.
9. **Begin your teaching and make any adjustments** to the story list and lessons as experience warrants.
10. **Begin training an assistant.** someone else in beginning their story-ing sessions.
11. **Keep a diary or good notes** which may help
12. **Think about what you are doing and why** so that you can train others to teach by storying.

Some Bible story themes which have been helpful:

The Living God—Hindus and idol worshipers

The Way to Life and Heaven—Buddhists

The Suffering Servant—for those who live under persecution, threat, or natural disasters.

The Honor of God and Man—exploring the issue of honor as God honored man and man is to honor God just as Jesus honored the Father.

Stories of the Prophets—primarily for Muslims

God and Woman—focusing on the worldview of women where it is significantly different than that of men.

The True High Priest—the need for a reliable intercessor that only God could provide.

The Emmaus Road—while developed for Muslims focuses on why the Christ had to suffer and die.

Peace with God—speaking to Hindus and those burdened with the broken relationship due to sin.

The Family of God—focusing on the loss of relationship with God through sin and the restored relationship when there is repentance,

forgiveness of sin and salvation
(deliverance).

The value of a theme is that it helps in the development of lesson themes and teaching activities and questions.

A special application of Bible storying useful for a variety of purposes *Tracking the Gospel*—is *Fast* What is it?

Fast-tracking the Gospel is telling the Bible stories in a continuous sequence from some beginning point (typically Creation) through the story of Jesus. It can be done in varying amounts of time from an hour to several days depending on how many stories are used and how much detail is kept in each story. In Fast-tracking the storyer does not stop to conduct a typical teaching session with dialogue and questions. Instead the impact is brought through the continuing stories which flow from one to the next. It is realized that the listeners cannot remember all they are hearing, but they do get the drift and they do get an excellent panorama of the Bible story which lets them see where it is headed.

How is Fast-tracking helpful? First, it can be used to test for interest and potential response to the Gospel. It moves quickly and does not give time for hardening against any one story to really set in. If well done the listeners are usually willing to stay tuned even if they do not agree with what they are hearing or if it is challenging their beliefs. If the listeners are moved by the stories or interested to hear more, then arrange for a normal storying strategy.

Second, Fast-tracking is helpful for testing worldview assumptions when putting together a model set of stories. It keeps one from having to use many weeks or months in working through a set of stories to see if they are hitting home.

Third, Fast-tracking over a day or several days can be used with people who are inaccessible for longer periods of time for whatever circumstances.

Fourth, Fast-tracking can be used to redeem the time if asked to spend some time in a community following some ministry activity. One typical example is to story while waiting for food to be cooked and served when asked to stay for a meal after praying for a family or community members.

Always use the opportunity to tell the people that someone could come and tell more of the stories so they could understand them better. The people generally like to hear the stories repeated so they can relax and *hear* them better.

Fifth, Fast-tracking the Old Testament is an excellent way to prepare a people to view the Jesus Film. Even better is to Fast-track on into the Luke stories following the Jesus Film storyline so they are prepared to hear and understand the film better.

And sixth, Fast-tracking in a modified short session can be used bedside in a hospital or shared while traveling, or used in a home visit.

Using Bible pictures when storying—The old adage says that a good picture is worth a thousand words. This is true up to a point. Pictures have their advantages and their disadvantages. A good set of Bible teaching pictures can be a great asset in telling Bible stories and in qualifying someone who may not be accepted otherwise as a teacher except that the person possesses pictures (and hopefully a good working knowledge of the stories).

Advantages:

Pictures help to clarify story settings, relationships and any activities not common known to the listeners. (Altars and sacrifice, the tabernacle, anointing, the crucifixion)

Pictures are very helpful in reviewing earlier stories as the visual is associated with the story and triggers the recall.

Pictures may help to preserve the flow of the story as they are displayed in a sequence.

Pictures may help to illustrate the main truth in a story or climax of the story.

Pictures may give courage (and focus) to an otherwise fearful beginning storyer.

Contextualized pictures may ease some culture shock in presenting the stories.

Many pictures have powerful emotional content in certain cultures—prodigal son at the father's feet, woman wiping feet of Jesus with her hair.

Pictures, especially color pictures, are necessary to illustrate cer-

tain story items like shed blood in the OT sacrifices and of Christ on the cross.

Disadvantages:

Cost and availability.

Introduction of pictures may say to new storyers that one must have pictures in order to tell the stories. (Think before you leap!)

May introduce things in the pictures that are culturally inappropriate—length of women’s clothing, Jesus and Samaritan woman alone at the well, etc.

May focus on wrong instant of the story—Noah and sons building the ark, etc.

If produced by non-evangelicals may picture inaccurate observance of baptism.

Wear out from constant use and poor storage and transport conditions, needing periodic replacement.

Pictures of prophets are generally unacceptable to conservative Muslims.

Contextualized pictures may ease culture shock by identifying with clothing, race and features but are historically inaccurate. (It is a toss-up between accuracy and effectiveness in teaching the lesson point.)

Always test pictures before using them to determine which ones are unacceptable and which ones do not communicate well.

Training of Bible storying workers is essential. Bible stories are themselves a good source of teaching good leadership principles and contrasting with poor leadership principles. Practice makes perfect. Every Bible storyer will have their own style. It takes a lot of time and perseverance to become proficient at storying without having to rely constantly upon notes. It is worth the effort. The FIRST PERSON who will be changed by the stories is YOU the storyer. God’s Word will never again be the same for you. You will LIVE the stories. You will make mistakes, we all do. Remember, even a child can tell a story and so can you. The stories you tell are for adults with adult themes and will help to determine where the listeners will spend eternity.

There are Bible storying trainers like myself who are available to give counsel

as time permits and give direction for helping to develop an effective Bible storytelling strategy. May God bless you as you TELL THE STORY.

J. O. Terry, 2 Marine Vista, #20-75 Neptune Court, Republic of Singapore 449026

Or: International Mission Board/SBC Box 6767 Richmond, Va. 23230

XII. BIBLE STORYTELLING

by Jackson Day

Bible stories include the historical accounts narrated in the Bible and the parables told by Jesus. Stories are the most common type of literature in the Bible. Of the thirty-nine Old Testament books, thirty-four contain stories of events. The following Old Testament books primarily contain historical stories: Genesis, Joshua, Judges, Ruth, I and II Samuel, I and II Kings, I and II Chronicles, Ezra, Nehemiah, Esther, Daniel, Jonah and Haggai. Large portions of Exodus, Numbers, Job, Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel contain historical stories. The twenty-seven New Testament books contain a mixture of stories, teachings, exhortations, discourses, warnings and prophecies. Each New Testament book contains stories. The greatest portions of the gospels of Matthew, Mark, Luke and John are historical stories; almost all of Acts is narrative. Bible stories are God's major tools

Use Bible Stories with those who are predisposed to reject Bible teaching

Stories are the best approach to modify the viewpoints to those who are predisposed to reject Bible teaching. Bible storytelling may gain a hearing with people groups who are hostile to a direct confrontation of the gospel truths. A child named Billy couldn't swallow a pill. No matter what his mother tried, it wouldn't go down. Threats of spankings or promises of candy made no difference; the pill always ended up right on the tip of his raisin open, inserted the pill and gave it to Billy. He was able to swallow the raisin with its hidden pill, but was never able to swallow the pill alone, even though alone it was much smaller. Bible stories are excellent raisins to wrap truths in that are hard to swallow. Where frontal attack would certainly fail, the story becomes a raisin which contains the truth that is hard to

for teaching man His truths.

swallow.

Bible stories are helpful to gain listeners among those disinterested in the gospel. Some have no desire to hear the gospel because they are indifferent, not because they are hostile. They seek entertainment, but have no interest in God's truths. One may need to entertain them with Bible stories to draw them to be present to hear God's Word. The Bible story becomes a delicious raisin. While swallowing the story, God's truth may transform the listener who came only to be entertained.

Use Bible stories in a storying track, in a series, or as a solitary story

In a storying track

One of the best methods to teach divine truths is to follow the historical order. God progressively revealed the Scriptures within the structure and context of history. The Bible has a historical sequence and it will be transmitted with greater clarity when it is presented following its historical order of Genesis through Revelation. A storying track begins with the creation in Genesis, continues through the Old Testament, treats the life, death, resurrection and ascension of Jesus, continues through the book of Acts, places the Epistles in their chronological order within Acts, and finishes with stories related to the end times.

A Storying Track is highly effective in evangelizing those with little biblical knowledge. Narrate selected Old Testament stories that emphasize the character of God and the sinful nature of man. Then present New Testament stories from the gospels about the life of Jesus, people who followed Him, His crucifixion and resurrection. Conclude with stories from Acts about those who were converted.

The Multiple Storying Track is a plan for a group of stories to be told and retold to the same group of listeners for different purposes. It is cyclic in that some narratives are repeated more than one time. Each storytelling cycle has its own distinct purpose. Stories emphasized in each of the tracks are chosen to meet the needs of the listeners whose spiritual condition places them with that track. The Multiple Storytelling Track develops several tracks. I emphasize three: the Evangelistic Storytelling Track,

the Discipling Storytelling Track and the Leadership Equipping Storytelling Track. Multiple Storytelling Track plans are usually used with pre-literate tribal people or people groups that are hostile to Christianity. However, there are other possibilities for Multiple Storytelling Tracks.

The Single Storying Track presents one time a group of Bible stories in chronological order. With each story, truths are emphasized that connect with the needs of the listeners. The Single Storying Track is useful when evangelizing and teaching people groups who have a written language and are familiar with Christianity.

In a series of studies or sermons

There are many possibilities to use Bible stories in a series. For example:

- principal characters in Genesis;
- miracles in the Old Testament;
- great prophets;
- parables of Jesus,
- miracles of Jesus;
- people who talked alone with Jesus;
- people praised by Jesus;
- events in the life of the early church;
- events in the life of Paul.

As a solitary story

Solitary Storying isolates a narrative to be presented to a specific group for a specific occasion. Solitary Storying tells a Bible narrative that is not part of a Storying Track or series; it stands alone.

A solitary story can take advantage of situations such as: a funeral, a wedding, an invitation to visit the sick, a birthday party, an anniversary celebration. Tell one or two stories that are appropriate in the situation. For example:

— A young pastor was asked to speak at the funeral of an elderly lady. He told the story of Peter resurrecting Dorcas and stated: “As the widow ladies showed Peter the clothes Dorcas had made; we are here to remem-

ber the deeds of Mrs. Bradford. Peter restored Dorcas to life and we are comforted during our grief because Mrs. Bradford's faith in Jesus will result in her resurrection to enjoy a new life".

A solitary Bible story can be used to resolve a specific question or spiritual need. For example:

— A listener believes that a criminal may not be saved. The storyteller could use the stories of the thief converted while on the cross or of Saul's conversion to explain that Jesus came to seek and save even criminals.

— A new believer returns to drinking and gets drunk. Some church members don't want to give the backslider another chance. The story of Jesus' encounter with Peter after his betrayal could be applied.

HOW TO ANALYZE A BIBLE STORY

Before becoming an effective storyteller, or preacher-teacher who uses storytelling, one must become a story-analyst. The following steps explain how to analyze a Bible story. Read, reread and read the story again and again. Read the biblical passage that contains the chosen Bible story several times. It is helpful to read the same passage, using different translations of the Bible.

Identify the structure of the story

The typical story adheres to the following structure:

— the initial sequence in which a problem or need is set up, created or identified.

— the episode sequence in which the story develops with its pattern of problem, conflicts and aborted attempts at resolution.

— the climax sequence in which the outcome of the story is reached.

Steps to identify the structure of the story

1. Consider the context of the Bible story

The context considers the background of the story: who told the story, what was the historical setting for the story, and what episodes took place beforehand that influenced the narrative. Consider what the context (Bible passage before and after the text with the story) reveals about the historical circumstances and the purpose to the story.

2. Determine the key person or persons

Identify the key person or persons in the story. Determine who is the chief character in the narrative. Some narratives only have one chief character; in others more than one person stands out.

3. Determine the key location

Identify the principal location where the events took place. In some narratives it is essential to identify the location where the events took place if the story is to be clearly understood. In others it is not.

4. Determine key repetitions

Words, themes, facts or ideas often tie events in a Bible story together that are repeated either exactly or with minor variations. Repetitions are made in biblical stories in order to emphasize truths, to build a climax or to express strong emotions. Since repetition is done purposely, it is important to determine if there is repetition.

For example: In the story of Joseph in Potiphar's house, there is repetition of the facts:

- þ the Lord was with Joseph (Gn. 39:2, 21, 23);
- þ Joseph was the overseer of all in Potiphar's house (Gn. 39:4, 6, 8, 9);
- þ Potiphar's wife invited him to lie with her (Gn. 39:7, 10, 12).

5. Determine the key attitudes expressed in the story

Stories express attitudes and emotions. A story may express a positive or negative attitude. Resignation, cynicism, hostility, shock, horror, sorrow, pain, love, joy, surprise and wonder are some of the attitudes

expressed through stories. The storyteller needs to express the same attitudes as those expressed in the Bible. He needs to help his listeners feel the same emotions as those expressed in the Bible story.

6. Determine the key problem.

Stories begin with a problem or need which intensifies with a series of episodes until a climax is reached. The beginning episodes of a Bible story usually create or identify the problem that is the key to understanding the story. Examples of problems found in Bible stories: enemies, opposition, conflict, oppression, contradiction, danger, unmet need, more than one seeking a goal that can be obtained only by one, and God's will in conflict with man's desires. One needs to determine the main problem or need presented at the beginning of the story.

7. Identify the reference episodes in their chronological order.

Bible stories are arranged in a series of episodes. One needs to identify the series of episodes from the beginning until the end of the story. Stories begin with a problem or need which intensifies with a series of episodes until a climax is reached. The story develops with its pattern of problems, conflicts and aborted attempts at resolution until there is a final result. Each event that complicates the problem or each attempt at finding a resolution is an episode within the story. Some stories are complex with subdivisions that contain plots within plots. There are many twists and turns of the plot of the more complex story. Each subdivision; plot, plan, turn of events or new development, is an episode within the story. Observe the reference episodes in the order narrated.

After determining the key problem, note the sequence of events until the story reaches a climax.

8. Discover the climax of the story.

Stories begin with a problem or need which intensifies with a series of episodes until a climax is reached. There is a connection between the key problem presented at the beginning of the story and the climax. There is a pattern of problems, conflicts and aborted attempts at resolution until there

is a final result, whether sad or glad. Some stories end with a positive climax, others a negative. Discover what happened as a result of the character seeking to solve the problem or satisfy the need that was the basis of the story.

Discover lessons expressed by the story

Discover important lessons or truths taught by the story and write them down.

Seek the obvious lessons. Try to extract all the obvious lessons taught by the story.

Underline or otherwise mark lessons that are most important to communicate to one's students or listeners. One can discover many important lessons in any Bible story. It is impossible to use all of them in one sermon or Bible study. Select and mark those to be used.

EXAMPLE ANALYSIS OF A BIBLE STORY

STORY: Joseph's Temptation

TEXT: Gn. 39:1-23

STRUCTURE:

CONTEXT:

Joseph's brothers sold him to slave merchants (Gn. 37). Joseph was taken to Egypt and sold to Potiphar, an Egyptian officer who was captain of Pharaoh's body guard (Gn. 39:1).

Key person: Joseph

Key location: Egypt, Potiphar's home

Key repetitions:

- "The Lord was with Joseph" (39:2, 3, 21, 23).
- Potiphar put Joseph in charge of everything he owned (39:4, 5, 6, and 8).
- Potiphar's wife invited Joseph to lay with her (39:7, 10, 12).
- Potiphar's wife accused Joseph of trying to have sex with her to the

servants (39:14-15) and to his master (39:17-18).

Key attitudes:

- Hope in the mist of despair is expressed:

> Joseph, the slave, becomes a blessing (39:1-5).

> Joseph is tempted but resists (39:9-12).

> Joseph is falsely accused but prospers in prison (39:14-23).

Potiphar's wife desires for Joseph to go to bed with her (39:7-11).

Joseph declines sexual temptation (39:8-12).

Potiphar burned with anger when he heard his wife's accusation against Joseph (39:19).

Key problem: Potiphar's wife invites Joseph to go to bed with her.

Reference episodes in their chronological order:

— Joseph was taken to Egypt and bought by Potiphar (39:1).

— The Lord was with Joseph (39:2).

— Joseph gained Potiphar's favor and became the overseer of all he owned (39:4-6).

— Joseph was handsome, and his master's wife invited Joseph: "Come to bed with me!" (39:7).

— Joseph refused: "My master has entrusted everything in the house to my care.

Everything he owns he has entrusted to my care. My master has withheld nothing from me except you, because you are his wife. How then could I do such a wicked thing and sin against God?" (39:8-9).

— She spoke to Joseph day after day, but he refused to go to bed with her or even to be with her (39:10).

— One day when Joseph was alone in the house with her, she caught him by his garment. He left his garment in her hand and fled (39:11-12).

— The woman called her household servants and said: "This Hebrew came in here to sleep with me, but I screamed. When he heard me scream for help, he left his cloak beside me and ran out of the house" (39:13-19).

When Potiphar returned home she told him, "That Hebrew slave you brought us came to make sport of me. When I screamed for help, he left

his cloak and ran out of the house” (39:17-18).

— Potiphar burned with anger and put Joseph into the jail with the king’s prisoners (39:19-20).

— In prison, the Lord was with Joseph (39:21).

Climax:

Joseph was put in prison but God was with him (39:20-21).

LESSONS TAUGHT BY THE STORY:

1. The one who serves God may suffer injustice. Joseph was sold into slavery (39:1) and later jailed because of false accusations (39:20).

2. God is always present with those who are faithful to Him. God was with Joseph (39:2, 21, 23 // Ps. 46:1-2).

3. When those who do not believe in God are aware that God is blessing His servant, that servant is giving a good witness. Potiphar saw that God was with Joseph (39:3).

4. Those who do not serve God may become blessed because of their relationship with a believer in God. The Lord blessed Potiphar because of Joseph (39:5).

5. The one who serves God is subject to strong temptation. Seventeen year old Joseph was tempted to have sex with his master’s wife (39:7, 10-12).

6. A person may become blind to moral values. Potiphar’s wife was blind to the importance of moral values in the home (39:7).

7. Belief in God gives one reason to resist temptation. Joseph’s belief in God gave him the conviction that betraying his master would be a sin (39:9).

8. Wrong done to a fellow human being is sin against God. Joseph

realized that to betray his master would be to sin against God (39:9).

9. The one who tempts others to sin may resent the person who resists temptation. Potiphar's wife tempted Joseph to have sex with her, then sought revenge against him when he refused (39:13-19).

10. The person who yields to temptation places the blame on others. Potiphar's wife did not assume her responsibility for attempting to seduce Joseph and used the garment he left when fleeing to falsely accuse him (39:13-14).

11. God's servants live in a corrupt world and may suffer injustice as a consequence of doing what is right. When Joseph resisted sexual temptations, he was falsely accused and jailed (39:20).

12. God is present with His servant who suffers injustice. God was with Joseph (39:2-5, 23).

METHODS OF COMMUNICATING BY MEANS OF BIBLE STORIES

Different methods can be used to communicate Bible stories. In some settings the story is told, and that is all; in others the story is utilized as a teaching or preaching tool. The following mentions some of the principle methods used.

Storying

The pure Storying approach tells the Bible story, being faithful to biblical facts. When the story is finished, the storyteller is finished. The storyteller avoids distorting any facts recorded in the Bible, however he takes the liberty to use his own words, and briefly explains facts unfamiliar to his listeners.

This method usually tells the narratives in chronological order, telling one story or a cluster of stories at a time. The phrase Storying the Bible is common among storytellers who follow the chronological order, beginning

with the creation in Genesis, continuing through selective stories in the Old Testament, then telling stories about the birth, life, death, resurrection and ascension of Jesus, and concluding with stories from the book of Acts. The storyteller follows the historical sequence and seeks to preserve each story as recorded in the Bible.

When used in the worship service as the sermon, the sermon begins where the story begins and ends where the story ends. The sermon is the telling of the Bible story!

Storying with Dialogue

The narrator who uses Storying with Dialogue tells the Bible story, then discusses it with his listeners. The storyteller may ask a few questions and encourage his listeners to discuss the story, but the discussion is open-ended and is allowed to take the direction the listeners desire. Storying with Dialogue is widely used with missionaries ministering to tribal people without a written language who have little or no knowledge of biblical teachings. Also, it is the most effective method of gaining an audience among people groups hostile toward Christianity. The storyteller may over a period of time tell a Bible story a week, or he may tell the Bible stories in one setting, taking several hours or several days. After the stories are told, the listeners discuss them.

Storying with Teaching (Narrative Teaching)

The Storying with Teaching approach may also be called Narrative Teaching. The teacher narrates the story and then teaches truths extracted from it. The story is the text for the lesson plan. The Bible narrative is the main thing but it is framed with teaching emphasis. I emphasize two primary methods that may be used for Narrative Teaching.

In Narrative Teaching with Questions, the teacher tells the Bible story and then asks questions designed to help listeners discover truths from the narrative. The storyteller does not explain the story nor explain truths he

discovered in the story. He asks questions that guide the listeners to discover biblical truths for themselves.

There is a difference between Storying with Dialogue and Narrative Teaching with Questions. When using Storying with Dialogue, the discussion is open ended and listeners may take the discussion in any direction they desire. The one who uses Narrative Teaching with Questions selects truths revealed in the story and asks questions that help the students discover those lessons for themselves. He guides the discussion toward those lessons he desires to discuss.

The one who uses Narrative Teaching with a Lesson Plan selects lessons discovered in the story, cites the selected lessons, explains them, and guides discussion by asking questions about the narrative and the chosen lessons.

Storying with Preaching (Narrative Preaching)

Storying may be coupled with preaching. The Storying with Preaching approach may also be called Narrative Preaching. The storyteller tells the story and then uses the story as a basis for preaching. The story is the text for the sermon. The Bible narrative is the main thing but it is framed with a sermon and application. I emphasize two basic methods that may be used for Narrative Preaching.

The storyteller-preacher who uses Storying with Preaching after the Story, tells the Bible story that is the text to his sermon and then develops the lessons discovered in the story as the points of his sermon. The preaching application is delayed until after the telling of the story.

The storyteller-preacher who uses Storying with Preaching Inserted narrates the Bible story; when he comes to an episode that inspires a lesson, he stops storytelling, inserts his lesson and develops it as a sermon point. Afterwards he continues storytelling until he reaches another episode that inspires a lesson he wishes to develop. He continues narrating

and inserting lessons transformed into sermon points until the story is finished.

CONCLUSION

Bible stories communicate God's messages. It is easier to study and interpret correctly a Bible story than a doctrinal text such as Paul's letters. The easiest sermon or Bible study to prepare has as its text a Bible story. There are less dangers for the new leader to misinterpret the Bible and fall into error when he uses Bible stories. Everyone loves a story. Consequently the listeners or students will pay attention, the Word of God will be transmitted and understood, and lives will be transformed.

The storyteller can trust Bible stories to produce fruits beyond his expectations. One can never predict the results of a well-told story, but the storyteller should expect the results to surprise him with joy. A Bible story is comparable to the seeds of Jesus' parables that grow in their own manner and produce fruits beyond what is expected. A Well-told story will produce fruit. Trust the story! Tell the story! Teach the story! Preach the story!

Pastor Jackson Day is a recognized specialist in Biblical Storytelling. He and his wife, Doris, are missionaries in Brazil and have developed many materials for Storying. You may contact him at the following address: Jackson Day, IMB/SBC Box 6767 Richmond, Va. 23230 USA.

XIII. THE PIONEER AND THE STEPS OF THE PIONEER EVANGELISM METHOD

It is very important that each pioneer clearly understands the steps of the Pioneer Evangelism Method. Let us carefully observe these steps. This book will explain in detail each one separately.

IMPORTANT: It is very important that you understand about the

materials used in this program and the references to them used in this training manual. Any good evangelistic follow-up and discipleship material will work. The person presenting the gospel and doing the follow-up work is more important than the materials.

The following materials have been used:

- Gospel Tract: “How to Have Eternal Life” by Wade Akins.
- Basic Evangelistic Bible Studies: “Good News From God” studies by Waylon Moore.
- Basic Evangelistic Bible Studies: “Good News For You” by Dr. Charles Brock.
- Basic Evangelistic Bible Stories: “Good News of Jesus” stories by Christy A. Brawner. Excellent for non-readers.
- Simplified Evangelistic Studies: “New Life” by Wade Akins. For people who are not good readers. These studies have the same information as the gospel tract above, but have been divided into seven lessons. Excellent for non-readers.
- Immediate Follow-up Sheet: “Six Truths for New Converts” by Wade Akins. To be done within 48 hours after the person’s conversion.
- Discipleship Bible studies: “I’m a New Christian, What Now?” by Dr. Charles Brock.
- Discipleship Bible stories: “Beginning a New Life in Christ” by Christy A. Brawner. Excellent for non-readers.

As you study through this manual you will note references to these materials. However, you can use other materials if you desire. For the purpose of this training we make reference to the “How to Have Eternal Life” gospel tract. Other examples of the same type of material are “The Four Spiritual Laws”, by Campus Crusade for Christ; and “Steps to Peace with God”, by Billy Graham. You may use the gospel tract of your choice every time you see a reference to the one provided in this book. The same principle is applicable to any of the other materials listed above.

The process of the Pioneer Evangelism method:

1. Learn about the city in which you plan to work. Pick out the locations where you would like to start your cell groups and begin to make contacts.
2. Start Bible studies in homes using any of the Good News studies or stories series or New Life series. You are not confined to these choices, use any evangelistic Bible Study you prefer. Remember to use the indirect method.
3. Teach the new “Christians the Six Truths for the New Christian” by Pr. Thomas Wade Akins, or any other study designed for immediate follow-up of conversions. Use the indirect method. This study should be done in the first forty-eight hours following conversion.
4. Begin worship services.
5. Start discipleship groups using the Follow-up studies. Remember to always use the indirect method.
6. Baptize the new converts.
7. Train local leaders using “Discipleship for Local Leaders” by Waylon Moore and Pr. Thomas Wade Akins (this is found in the appendix section). Train these leaders to execute the various ministries of the church such as preaching, teaching, working with children, etc.
8. Let the local leaders lead new Evangelistic Bible Studies groups and the Follow-up material, as well as preach to their people, etc.
9. Assist the local church in finding an adequate meeting place; home, store front, etc. If this requires paying rent or any cost the local church will be responsible for these expenses.
10. Organize the church. In nations where there is religious freedom this can be done. However, **this is extra-biblical** and does not have to be done in any official manner unless culture, a local church, association or convention or union requires this to be done.
These are the general steps. We will present these steps to a fuller extent later on in the section of this manual titled THE PLAN—THE STRATEGY.

THE PLAN

PHASE I in church planting is to go from ground zero to the point you will begin to structure the church. PHASE II you will structure the new work. There are many models of structuring the new church but we are going to mention only four. This chapter also presents a plan for PHASE I.

1. THE TRADITIONAL CHURCH

This model is program based. This will have often have programs such as Sunday School. These are extra Biblical. There is a strong emphasis on having a building and is mostly controlled by the pastor and/or strong group of elders or deacons.

2. THE SATELLITE CHURCH

This model is widely by sponsoring mother churches in which they will have a number of missions and/or congregations. The mother or sponsoring church will control these missions and/or congregations. Each of the congregations will have worship, Bible study, fellowship etc. in homes, storefronts, or a small chapel. Yet, they are still members of the mother church. Often the tithes and offerings are sent back to the mother church. The major problem is that many of these satellite congregations do NOT have the philosophy of reproducing themselves until they become an organized mother church herself. In many cases, the requirements to organize is that she must have land, building and an ordained pastor. However, these are man created requirements and do not come from God.

3. THE CELL CHURCH

This model is when the mother church will have cells that meet in homes, storefronts, offices etc. These cells are organized on geographical or on a homogeneous unit basis such as youth cells, women's cells, men's cells, etc. The emphasis in the cell meetings is community and body life, pastoral and member care and accountability. They often do the Communion

service in the cell and can even do baptisms on the cell level. Each cell is led by a layman who will preform the ordiances. Each week all the cells gather for a gaint Celebration service.

4. THE POUCH CHURCH

This model was developed by missionary Curtis Sargaent. Small churches are started in homes of new believers. They are ALL lay led and grow to the size of about fifteen people and then they multiply. Each unit is a seperate local independent church. POUCH means:

P= Participating—all members participate in the Bible studies, worship and body life.

O=Obedience—this is the stardard of measurement for suces and not how large it grows.

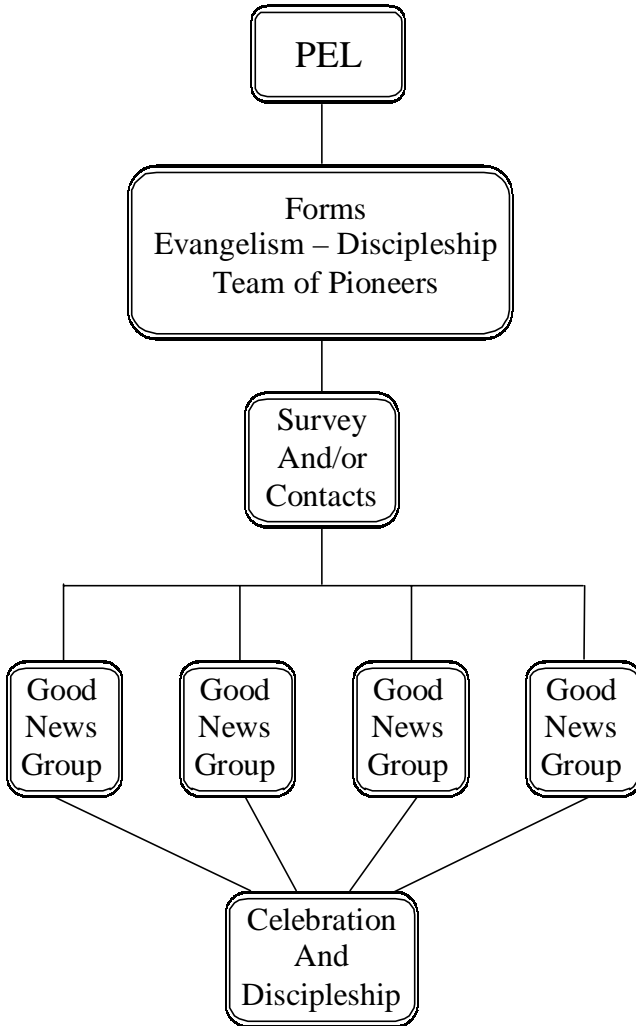
U=Unpaid leaders—all leaders and pastors are lay people.

C=Cells—they meet in small groups

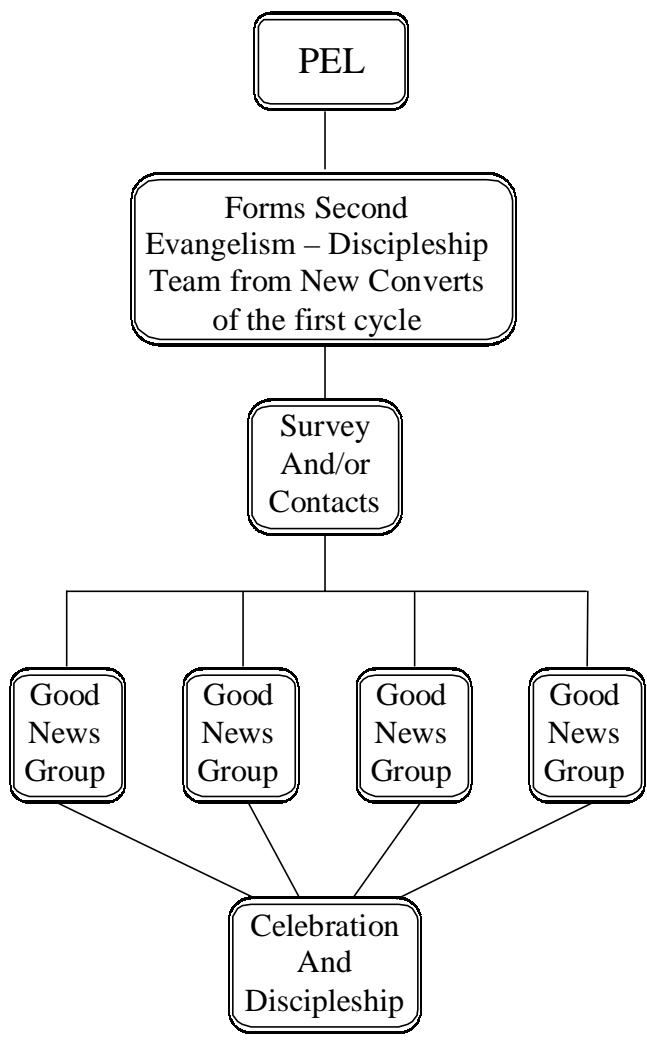
H=House ----worship services in houses or storefronts.

THE PIONEER EVANGELISM CYCLES

CYCLE 1

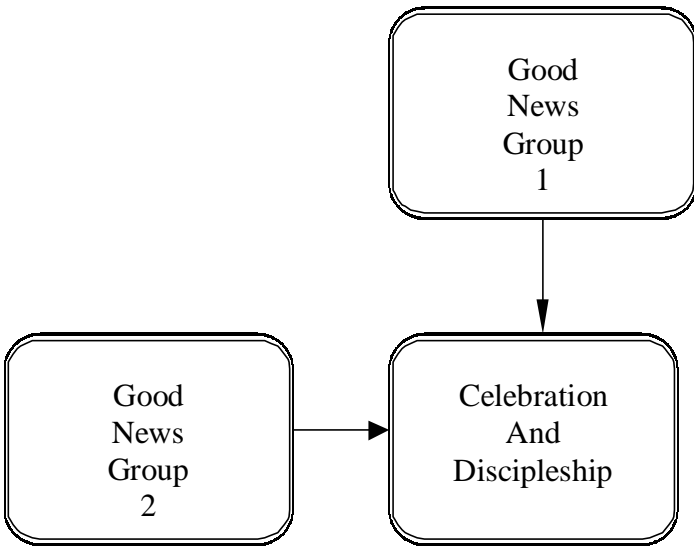


CYCLE 2

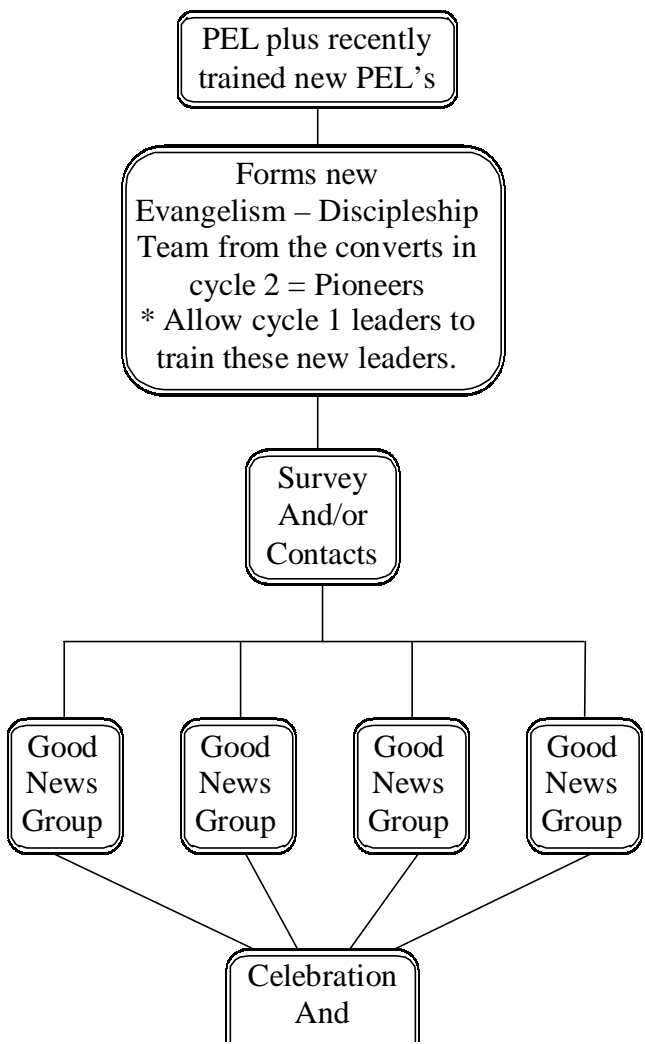


Cycle 2 Continued

This celebration service can be united with the celebration service of cycle 1 or become a separate local church.

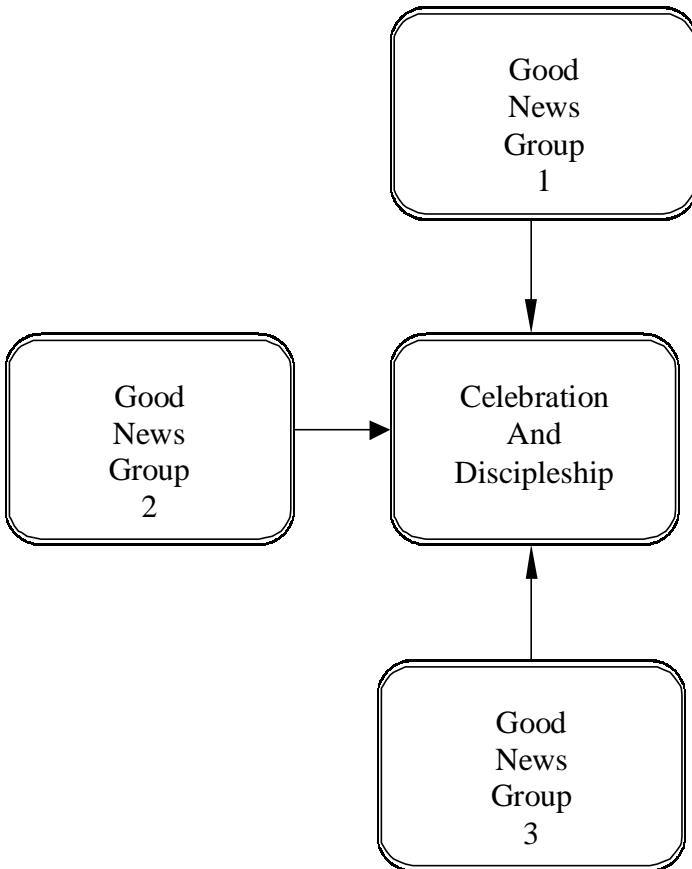


CYCLE 3

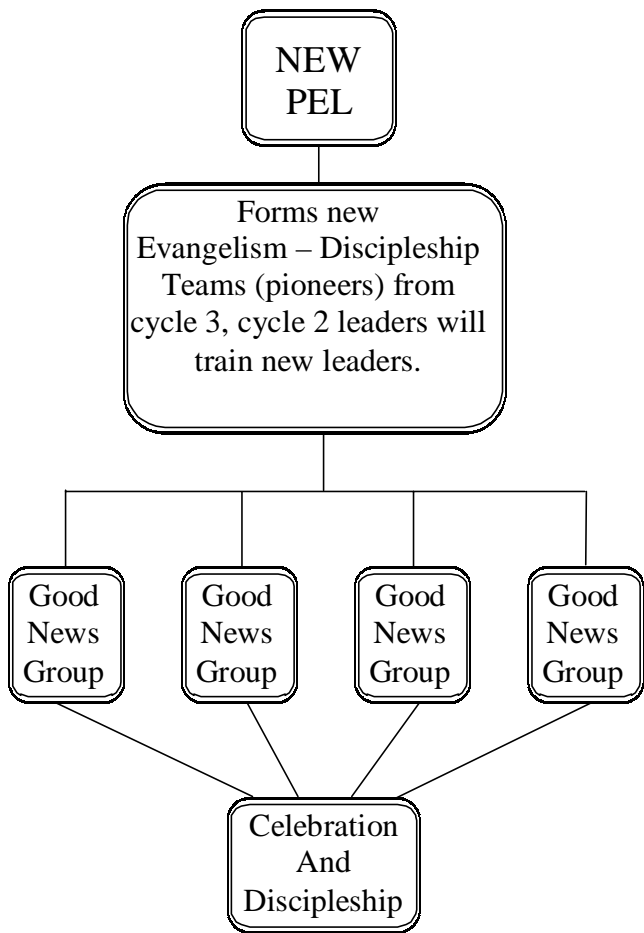


In cycle 3, the Good News Groups, celebration Services and Evangelism- Discipleship training should be led by the new believers won to Christ in Cycles 1 and 2 instead of the original PEL

Cycle 3 Continued

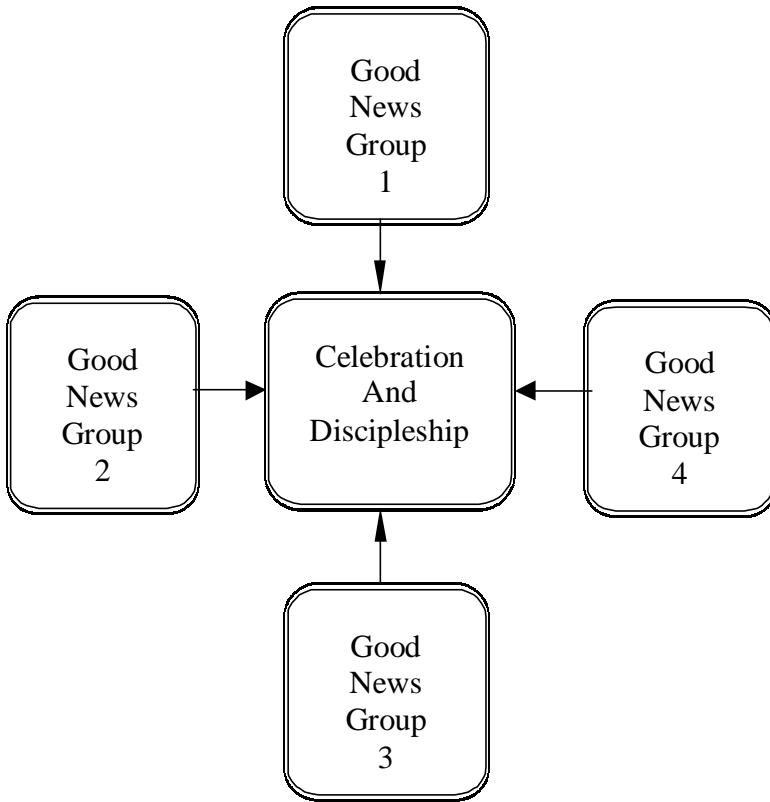


CYCLE 4



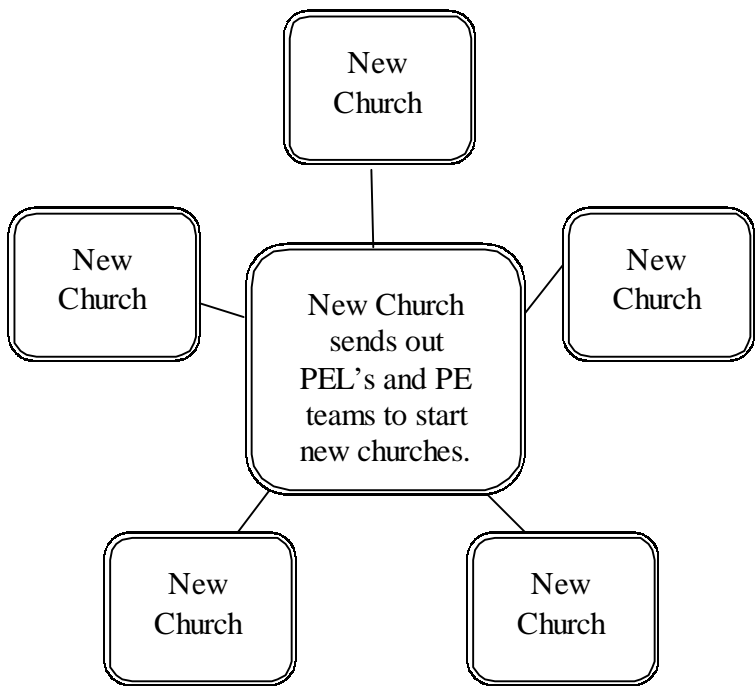
Local leaders are now leading all the Good New Groups, Celebration and Discipleship groups. The new leaders should now be trained to lead the church.

Cycle 4 Continued



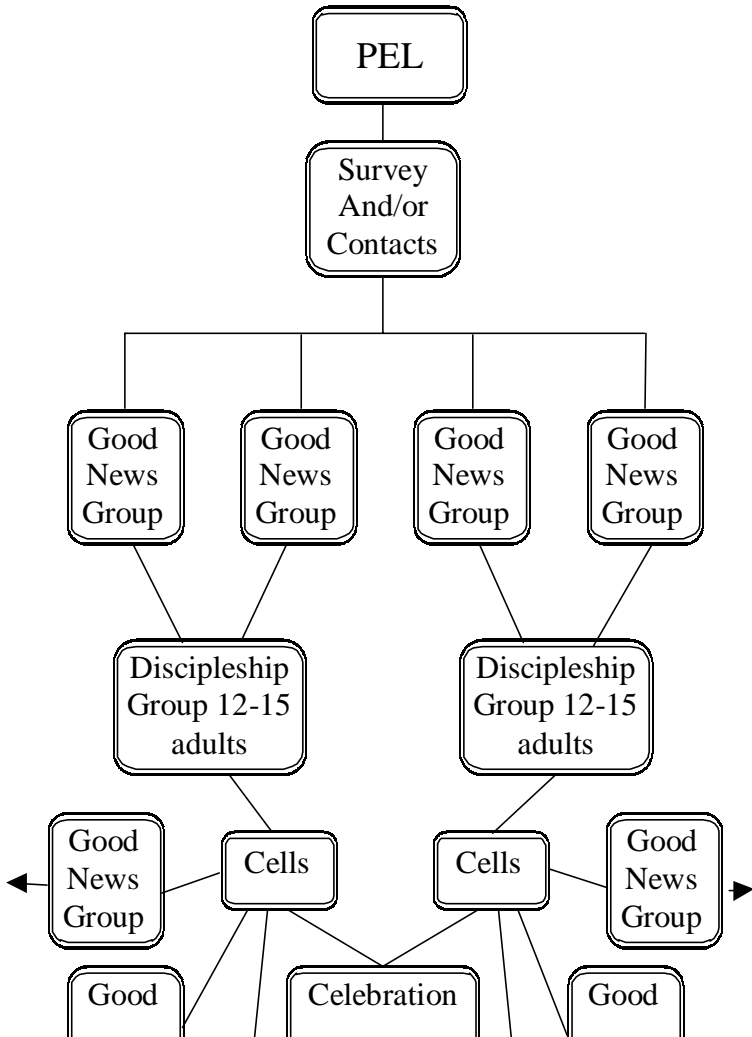
These could be one local church or four different churches depending on your cultural reality. Local leaders should be leading all cycles

CYCLE 5

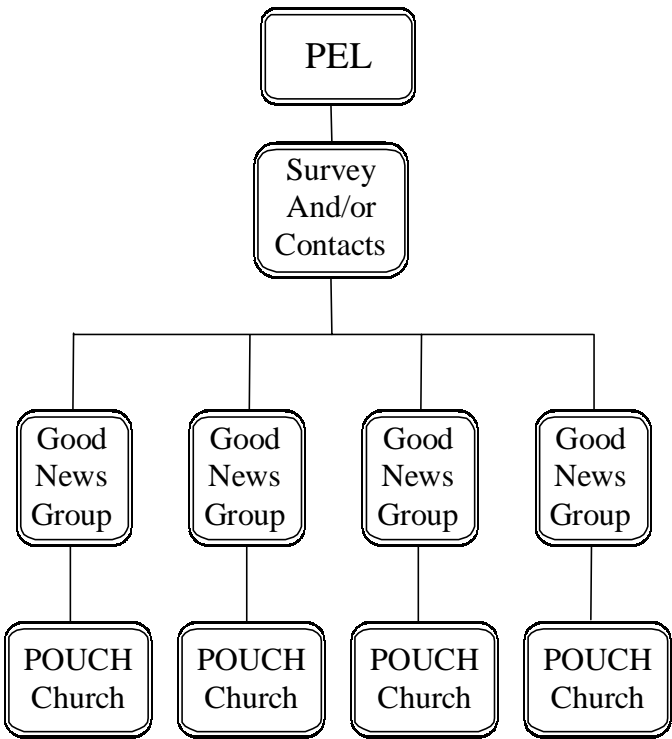


The New Church reproduces itself.

Using PE Strategy to Start Cell Churches



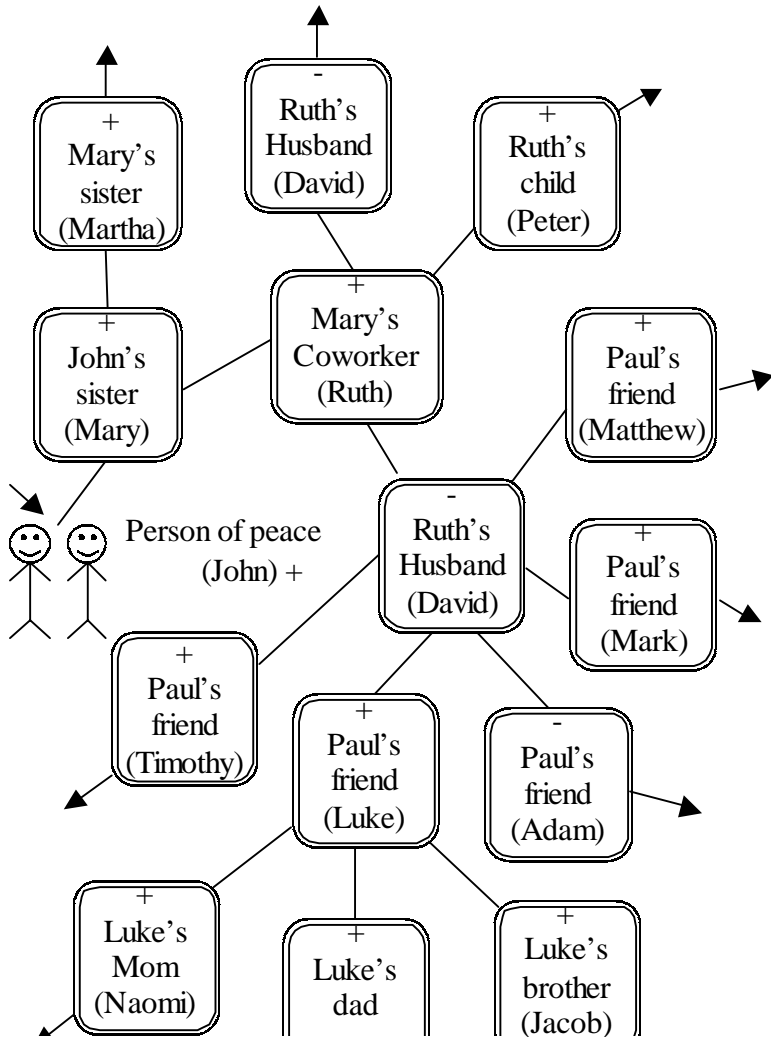
Using P.E. for P.O.U.C.H. Church



The Process of the “OIKOS”

+ People who have accepted Christ because of the conversion of the person of peace

- Not yet a believer



The Process Continues...

(The strategy)

FIRST CYCLE

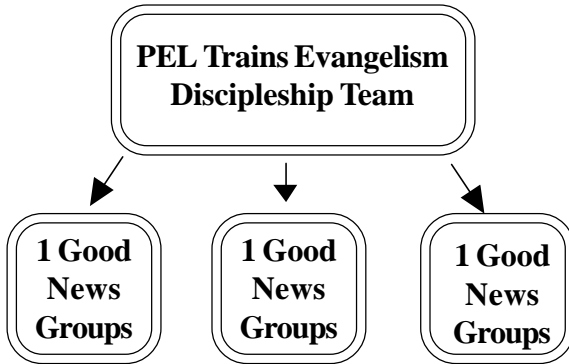
1st. Step- SURVEYS AND CONTACTS (Discover those who are interested)

1. Find the man of peace (Luke 10: 5-6). Discover those people (non-Christians) who would be interested in having a Bible study and/or worship service in their home. In some cultures, it may be necessary to make in-depth contacts, or rather, friends with those you want to reach in order to motivate their interest in having a Bible study in their home.
2. Ask the six questions stated in chapter seven in the Practical Aspects in this manual.
3. Present the gospel on the first contact only when you believe that you will not return to that particular person or house. Otherwise build a relationship.
4. Determine a target area that you are able to attend. Then update your information about the people who live there.

2nd. Step-GOOD NEWS or NEW LIFE GROUPS, 1st cycle

1. Take all of the necessary materials to the study (lessons, tracts, copies of the Good News Bible Studies or Stories.)
2. Personally do the lessons with the group. Do not let them take them to do at home during the week by themselves. Doing the studies together will build relationships. Begin the evangelistic cell groups following the Good News Bible Studies or Stories with four to ten different groups of families or lost people in different locations. Lead as many groups as you possibly can, but no more than you can successfully manage. You may choose to use the simplified evangelistic study New Life with people who have difficulty reading long texts. Another option would be to create your own culturally appropriate stories use the storying methods by J. O. Terry and Jackson Day found in this book.

First Cycle of Good News Studies



OBSERVE: In some cultures these may become three different local churches.

3rd. Step- “SIX TRUTHS FOR THE NEW CHRISTIAN”

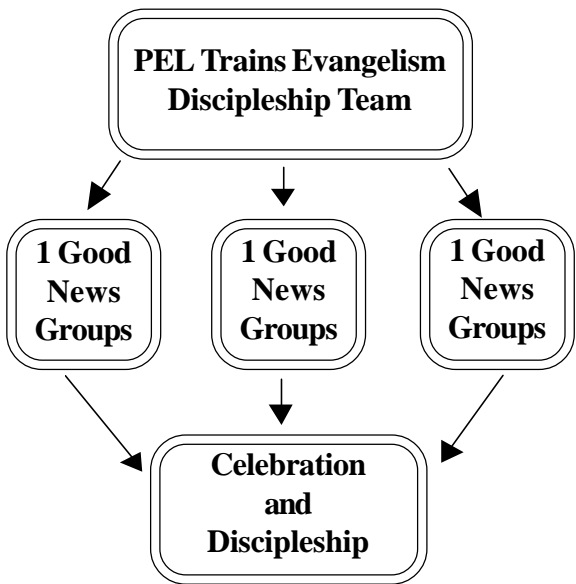
Do the immediate follow-up with the new Christians. You may use “Six Truths for the New Christian” (Appendix 1) or any other follow-up designed to affirm and guide new believers. Follow-up should be done in the first 48 hours after a conversion.

4th Step - WORSHIP SERVICES AND FOLLOW UP BIBLE STUDIES

1. The pioneer will invite all those who have completed the Good News Bible Studies to join together for discipleship studies and celebration services. The purpose of these studies will be to lead those who have not accepted Christ to understand salvation and then teach the new Christians to practice their faith. For example, a new Christian should understand well about his old and new nature, and the fight that will occur between the

two natures. He should learn how to win over his old nature through the power of the Holy Spirit. If this is not clearly understood by a new Christian, he may have a wrong understanding about the Bible, and may even feel that he has lost his salvation. It is for this reason that the Follow-up material is so important in teaching the new Christians how to exercise their faith. However, the understanding of Christian doctrine without a practical application has no value. Therefore, these six truths of the faith should be taught: assurance of salvation and eternal life, baptism, how to read the Bible, prayer, the need of belonging to a local evangelical church, and how to share the faith (Appendix 1).

2. These discipleship meetings and celebration services will be the beginning of the new church. Use the time of worship to praise the Lord, pray, and informally teach the Bible using indirect methods and/or Storying.



Those who have completed the Good News studies will now join for worship.

OBSERVE: In some cultures it may be a better option to keep the Good News Groups separate and allow each to become it's own local church which will multiply itself.

3. The pioneer has the option to use the discipleship studies as a part of the celebration service or teach these studies at a different time; perhaps in a cell or before or after the celebration service.

4. Do not allow anyone to begin any other series of studies before completing all of the discipleship material. For example, if someone joins the discipleship study at the fourth lesson, he can complete the studies but should then complete the first three lessons of the discipleship material before beginning the next study.

5. Sometimes you may need to lead the discipleship studies in two-step sessions. In other words, one lesson can be divided so that it is studied in two meetings. Remember to use the Indirect Method in order to promote the learner's involvement.

SECOND CYCLE

1. Train the new local leaders to help lead the studies using indirect method. The pioneer will now train those who are potential leaders to lead the Good News studies and the discipleship in the homes. During the second cycle they will accompany the pioneer as he leads the new Good News studies in other homes. The new local leaders will accompany the pioneer through a series of studies before they themselves will lead an entire series. The pioneer should start as many Good News Studies in other homes in the area as he possibly can.

Designate a special time to train small groups of laymen to lead the work (Good News Bible Studies or Stories, discipleship material, children ministries, and others). These leaders cannot be trained in mass.

Make a commitment to God to train the local leaders one on one or in

small groups using a good discipleship program. God will raise up those who the pioneer will want to train individually. Allow one hour to teach the material, and another hour to practice the ministry. For good leadership training to occur, it is imperative that time is invested not just in study, but in the field. Do not let Satan interfere with your practical training.



2. Begin more Good News Bible studies in other homes in the area with the new converts helping the pioneer. These studies are not to be done in the meeting hall used for the celebration service but in the homes of non-Christians.

Disciple new believers using good follow-up studies. This manual includes the “Six Truths for the New Christians” by Thomas W. Akins, “Discipleship for Local Leaders” by Waylon Moore and Thomas W. Akins and “Beginning a New Life in Christ” by Christy A. Brawner. If the studies are too long, divide each chapter in two weeks.

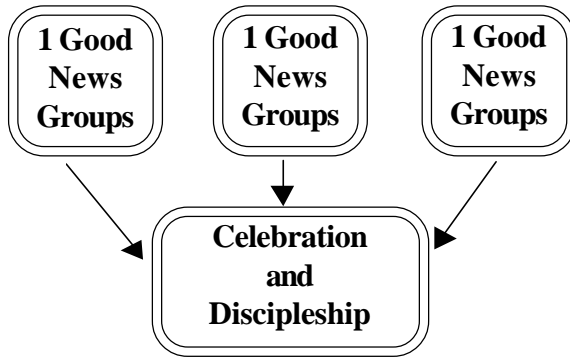
Second Cycle of Good News Studies
The new local leaders will accompany the pioneer in the new studies



3. Lead celebration services. While the pioneer is leading new Good News studies in the home of non-Christians, accompanied by the new local leaders, he will continue leading the celebration service and discipleship

studies with those who have completed the first cycle of Good News studies.

The new converts continue meeting together for celebration and discipleship.



OBSERVATION #1

Always train the new leaders in small groups. This is essential because the new leaders will not yet know how to lead worship.

If only one Good News group has been functioning or if there are extreme security limitations which would prevent leaders from several Good News groups from meeting together then make sure that there are at least two people from the group being trained together. The purpose of training two people is to maintain the group dynamic for modeling and training future leaders. Training leaders is your key to growth and multiplication.

OBSERVATION #2

Baptism should be introduced at this time and the new converts could be baptized immediately after the completion of the discipleship studies. From that point, the local leaders will be leading in worship.

OBSERVATION #3

You can form new house churches from those who complete the second round of Good News studies. This increases the development of new leaders from those groups, increases the likelihood that each group will reproduce (multiplying the reproduction rate), and increases the likelihood that they will develop a pattern of passing on what they have learned.

Also encourage the local leaders to continue meeting in homes rather than renting a place of worship in order to prevent a hindrance to reproduction.

OBSERVATION #4

It is a real advantage if the Good News studies can be carried out in small groups which consist of people who already have relationships. In some cultures people do not trust those with whom they do not already have a relationship (i.e. friends and family members). Then these become natural cores for new house churches.

As groups mature they can begin to make themselves known to one another via their leadership. They will then begin to gain the benefits of networking for encouragement, accountability, training, and outreach. However this is often not possible among brand new believers in some nations.

OBSERVATION #5

Also, the growth potential of cell groups and house churches are far greater than for larger groups. Unless there is a compelling cultural or historical reason for new churches in an area to buy or rent buildings and form larger congregations, they should probably be encouraged to pursue a house church model. It is always best to maintain focus on evangelism, discipleship and church multiplication.

OBSERVATION #6

Again use the Good News Bible Studies or Stories immediately if your worldview allows this. Another approach is to create your own chronological Bible storying tract using the chapters by J.O. Terry or Jackson Day in this manual before beginning the Good News Bible Studies or Stories with Buddhists, Hindus, animists, Muslims, Sikhs, Parsees, or with anyone who has had little or no awareness of Christianity or Christian teachings.

THIRD CYCLE

1. Continue to disciple leaders. The purpose of this discipleship group is to train leaders. Designate a time, in private not in mass, to train local leaders. Train them to use Indirect Methods of Bible study and/or Storying. Also instruct them in how to lead the church. The pioneer may use the material in the appendix by Dr. Waylon Moore and Thomas Wade Akins. It is important to note that this discipleship must be done in small groups privately in a separate location.

**Discipleship
Training
For
Leaders**

OBSERVATION

Have the new local leaders lead in worship rather than the pioneer as soon as possible. He can prepare them for this task in the separate leaders' meeting.

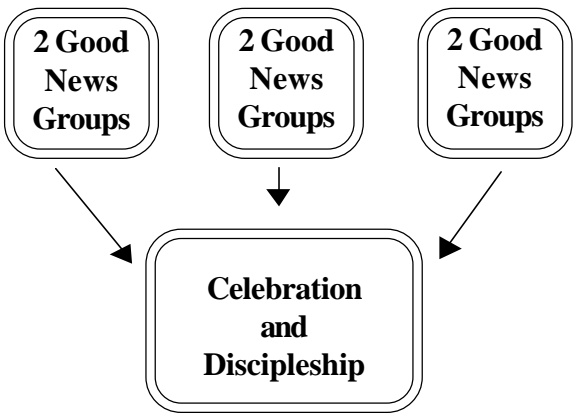
2. Begin more Good News Bible Studies (or Storying) groups in other homes in the area using the local leaders who have been trained

up through the second cycle to lead the studies. The new local leaders (those from the first cycle) will begin training the new converts from the second cycle of studies by taking these new converts with them to do these studies.

The new leaders from the first cycle of studies are leading these groups accompanied by the new converts from the second cycle of studies.



3. Begin integrating the second group of those who have completed the Good News studies into the celebration service. Continue the discipleship process in small groups. If at all possible, unite all the new converts with those who are already meeting in a central place for worship. Train the local people in regard to their responsibility to pay the rent for a place of worship, if they desire, instead on a sponsoring mother church or missionary organization or convention—if there is one.



FOURTH CYCLE

BEGIN THE NEW CHURCH OR CHURCHES

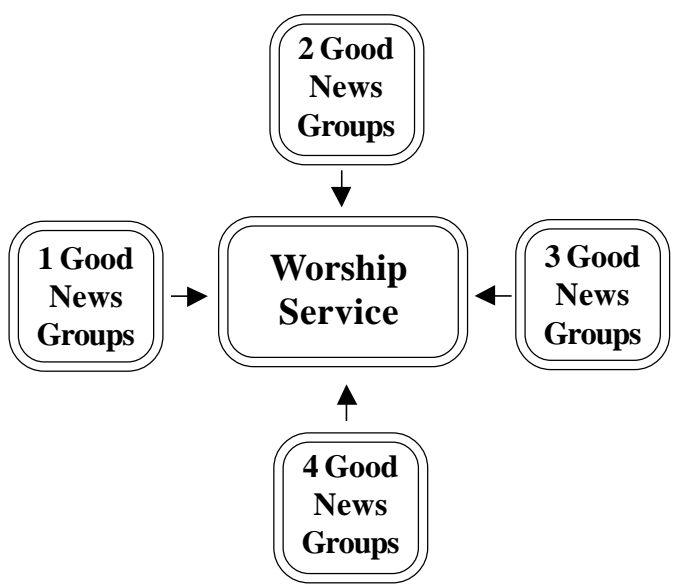
1. Train the local leaders how to lead the church.
2. **Begin more Good News groups in other homes using local leaders who have been led by the pioneer through step four.** The new converts who completed the second cycle and were trained in the third cycle of studies are ready to lead these studies by themselves. The leaders of the second cycle will take those new converts who completed the third cycle of studies with them to do the fourth cycle of studies.

Fourth Cycle of Good News Studies

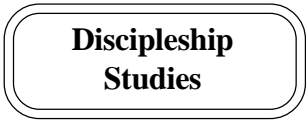


Leaders from the second cycle will lead these studies accompanied by those new converts who completed the third cycle of studies.

3. The local leaders are now leading the Good News Bible Studies, Six Truths, the worship service and the follow-up and discipleship.
4. Begin the church with the trained leaders who are being discipled. The group will choose to either continue divided in small cell group house churches or acquire a central meeting place. They will be responsible for any cost of rent or buying property.



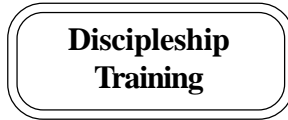
5. Always maintain a small discipleship group to continuously train new leaders.



LOCAL LEADERS IN ACTION

1. Allow the local leaders to lead the worship services and do all the work. These leaders have been trained previously or are in the process of being trained.
2. The original pioneer will now be able to prepare to leave the field for another area to start a new work.
3. Continue to train the leaders and begin Good News studies in the homes of non Christians.

4. The local leaders who have been trained by the pioneer should lead the Good News Bible Studies.
5. The local leaders that have been trained by the pioneer should lead the Follow-up studies.
6. Train the local leader to lead Discipleship groups using indirect methods.

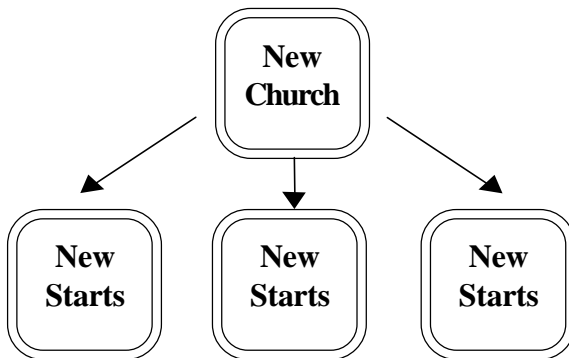


7. The local leaders that have been trained by the pioneers will lead the worship services.

FIFTH CYCLE

MULTIPLYING DISCIPLES AND NEW CHURCHES

The church will begin a new church, or churches, using these same methods. Continue to train leaders to repeat the cycles, continuing to multiply new churches.



The new church organizes multiple new works using this same method with mature and well trained lay people.

APPENDIXES

1. THE PIONEER EVANGELIST AND THE
USE OF SURVEYS
2. SIX TRUTHS FOR THE NEW CONVERT
3. A NEW LIFE
4. GOOD NEWS FROM GOD
5. GOOD NEWS OF JESUS
6. BEGINNING A NEW LIFE IN CHRIST
7. DISCIPLESHIP TRAINING FOR LOCAL
LEADERS

THE PIONEER EVANGELIST AND THE USE OF SURVEYS

Brazilian World Missions Board

Pioneer Evangelism Series

THE PIONEER EVANGELIST AND THE USE OF SURVEYS

The Brazilian Home Mission Board missionary's manual has outlined the subject of a surveying as the following:

1. The purpose of surveying
2. How to prepare for surveying
3. How to take a survey
4. How to evaluate a survey

1. Purpose of a Survey

The survey is a method to collect, through door to door visitation, the maximum amount of information about a people living at a certain place, during a certain period of time.

The **first purpose** is to discover where prospects live who are interested in the gospel.

The **second purpose** is to locate **support points** for future works. This means locate **better places** to start new works such as: home Bible studies, vacation Bible schools, etc. You may even be able to take advantage of other opportunities, such as locating Christians who have left the church and become re-interested, or Christians who have recently relocated and do not have a home church. These places and people can be called support points because they can help in the beginning of the new ministry.

The **third purpose** of a survey is to meet people in their own environment. Through such a setting it is possible to better understand the needs of the people, the community, and the cultural environment and context in order to better plan a program that is catered to the needs of the people.

The **fourth purpose** is to become acquainted with the area and to make friends with the people. This will help later on in the execution of your ministry.

The **fifth purpose** is to discover religious groups that exist in the area.

2. How to Prepare for a Survey

For a survey to have good results, it is necessary for the teams to be well prepared and take all safety precautions. In the next section we will outline the conditions for a good survey.

A. Spiritual preparation

- a. Pray for those who live in the neighborhood
- b. Pray for the team
- c. Pray for the pioneer

B. Preparation of the material

A folder that contains tracks, gospels of John, survey forms, Bible studies and a pencil.

- a. Check to see that your folder has all the necessary material.
- b. Make sure the team knows the exact location or block for which it is responsible.
- c. Check to see that you know the names of the streets and the layout of the area for which you are responsible.

C. Preparation of the location

- a. Know well the area of the survey on a map.
- b. Discover the best way to reach the location of the survey, also using a map.
- c. After arriving on location ask around and check street names to make sure you are at the right spot.

D. Summary

For a survey it is necessary to:

- a. Prepare spiritually through prayer and reading the Bible.
- b. Prepare the material making sure you have everything you need.
- c. Prepare the location by knowing well the area where you are planning the survey.

3. How to Take a Survey

A. The first step is to fill out the form:

- a. Write legibly
- b. Use one form for each family
- c. Fill out all the blanks of the form on both sides

B. Your attitude during the interview:

There are six essential points for each person who is interviewing:

- a. Positive
- b. Friendly
- c. Prudent
- d. Firm
- e. Gentle
- f. Objective

C. What to do during the interview:

- a. Explain the reason for the survey and what you are going to do with the collected information. For example:
- b. “We are going to start a Bible study in this neighborhood.”
- c. “We would like to know better those living in this neighborhood in order to better serve you.”
- d. Take the opportunity to give a quick testimony if the person shows any interest in the gospel.
- e. Avoid arguments even if you need to defend yourself.
- f. Speak with the right person. If a young teenage boy or child answers the door say, “I would like to speak with your father.” If it is a young girl, say, “I would like to speak with your mother.” If neither parent is home, then speak with the child. He can be an open door to the family.
- g. Do not over insist with too many questions; however, do not give up too easily.
- h. Go in pairs. One person writes down the information while the other one talks.

4. How to Evaluate the Survey

- A. Make sure you know exactly which streets and blocks have been surveyed.
- B. Mark off the completed forms on the maps.
- C. Make two lists: one of prospects and one of support points.
- D. Plan a time to visit the discovered prospects and prepare the necessary material for these visits.
- E. Evaluate the results each day.

SIX TRUTHS FOR THE NEW CONVERT

Thomas Wade Akins

Pioneer Evangelism Series

SIX TRUTHS FOR THE NEW CONVERT

INTRODUCTION

The Bible says in Colossians 2:6 “Just as you received Christ Jesus as Lord, continue to live in Him.” In this lesson you will learn how to live in fellowship with Christ.

When you were born physically you were born only once. When you receive Christ you are born spiritually, and again you are born only once. This is what is called in John 3, “the new birth.” Physically you can’t be reborn every Sunday and this is also true with your spiritual birth.

ASSURANCE OF SALVATION AND ETERNAL LIFE

Truth 1

What is eternal life? John 17: 3 says, “Now this is eternal life: that they may know you, the only true God and Jesus Christ whom you have sent.” In other words, eternal life is Jesus in your heart (spirit). This means that when Jesus enters your life, He will give you a new life and you will live eternally with Him in heaven.

I John 5:12 says, “He who has the Son has life, he who does not have the Son of God does not have life.”

What happens when you sin after you receive Christ? You do not lose your salvation! Let me explain. I have three children, and sometimes they disobey me. Do you think that I make them leave forever? Of course not! They are my children and I love them. What I do is correct them, teach them, and discipline them. The Bible says in Hebrews 12:7-8, “Endure hardship as discipline. God is treating you as sons. For what son is not disciplined by his father. If you are not disciplined (and everyone undergoes discipline), then you are illegitimate children and not true sons.”

The Bible says in John 1:12, “To those who believed in His name, He gave the right to become children of God.” Therefore, a son of God will be corrected when he sins. If not, you aren’t really a son of God. But a true son cannot lose his salvation because he has eternal life.

If you sin after you receive Christ, God will discipline you to train you to walk in the right ways. He will not take away your salvation. Your salvation is eternal, and eternal is forever!

BE BAPTIZED!

Truth 2

Jesus says in Matthew 28:19, “Therefore, go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit. And teaching them to do everything I have commanded you.”

Maybe you were baptized when you were a baby. But Jesus says that only those who are His followers have the right to be baptized. You were not a follower of Christ when you were a baby. You did not know anything about Jesus. You only became a follower of Christ when you accepted Him in your life through faith and repentance.

Why shouldn't you be baptized as a baby? Because baptism is a symbol (a means of identification) that you are a follower of Christ.

In the Bible, all of the followers were baptized by immersion after they received Christ. What is immersion? When you are baptized someone will put your whole body under water momentarily. Why? Because this is a symbol of the death, burial, and the resurrection of Jesus. You cannot do this when you are a baby, but you should do this after you receive Christ.

Romans 6:3-4 says, “Or don’t you know that all of us who were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into His death, we were therefore buried with Him through baptism into death in order that, just as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, we too may live a new life.”

The water does not save us. Only Jesus Christ saves. Your baptism is the first symbol that you really are a follower of Christ. If you do not know where to be baptized, ask your pioneer, or write a letter to the author of this study explaining where you have been saved and he will try to find someone to baptize you.

READ YOUR BIBLE

Truth 3

Psalms 119:105 says, “Your word is a lamp unto my feet and a light for my path.” The Bible is the word of God. The first part is called the Old Testament. The second part is the New Testament. The word testament means “a covenant.”

How should you read your Bible? The Bible is a love letter from God to you. Read your Bible using this method:

1. Begin reading a book- for example: the book of John.
2. Read the first verse.
3. Ask God to show you a spiritual truth in this verse. For example, John 1:1 says, “In the beginning was the word, and the word was with God, and the word was God.”

What are the spiritual truths found in this verse?

- a. The world was created by the word
- b. The word was God (verse 14 later tells us that the word is Jesus)
4. Read each verse or paragraph using this method and let God speak to you about who He is, about the sins in your life, orders for you to obey, etc.

PRAYER

Truth 4

God says in Luke 18:1 that we should pray always and not give up. How can you pray? It is important that you have time alone with God. Begin your time using this method:

1. Reading of the Bible- use the method of step 3 for 5 minutes
2. Praise- say, "Lord Father, I love you because . . ."
3. Thanksgiving- "I thank you Lord because . . ."
4. Intercession- "Lord I pray for my son Jeff, because he needs . . . (continue to pray for people who have not received Christ in their lives). Make a list of people. Put some of these names on a list for Sunday, Monday, Tuesday, etc., (and pray for them on these days)
5. Supplication- tell God your needs
6. Confession- remain silent for a time, and ask the Lord to bring to your mind any sin or bad thing in your life. First John 1:9 says, "If we confess our sins He is faithful and just to forgive us of our sins and cleanse us from our unrighteousness." This was written for people who have already received Christ. When you are dirty, you must take a bath. Confession for the Christian is a spiritual bath.

BECOME A MEMBER OF AN EVANGELICAL CHURCH

Truth 5

Ephesians 1:23 says, “For the church is the body of Christ.” Jesus Christ is the head of the church. Ephesians 1:22 says, “And God placed all things under his feet and appointed him to be the head of everything for the church.”

The word Peter means “rock.” Jesus Christ is referred to as a “rock.” In Matthew 16:18 God does not say that Peter is the head of the church, but that Jesus is the chief cornerstone. First Corinthians 3:11 says, “for no one can lay any other foundation other than the one already laid which is Jesus Christ.”

A church is a body of baptized believers who meet together for the purpose of:

1. Worship—the practice two ordinances—the Lord’s Supper and baptism
2. Evangelism
3. Discipleship
4. Human Needs ministries
5. Fellowship

Why do you need to belong to a church?

1. To praise the Lord with other brothers in Christ
2. To learn the word of God
3. To have fellowship with other believers in Christ (the church is your spiritual family)
4. To serve others
5. To share with people who have not received Jesus

6. Romans 10:13 - Ask the person if he would like to give his life to Jesus. If he says, “Yes,” ask him to pray and ask God into his life right now, “because all who call upon the name of the Lord will be saved (Romans 10:13).”

WITNESS

Truth 6

In Matthew 28:19 Jesus says, “Go and make disciples.” This means that each follower of Jesus should share with a lost person what happened in his life. This testimony should begin with the people of your own family. You should explain your life before you received Christ as your savior, how you realized your need for Jesus, how and when you received Christ, and what your life is like now with Christ. After doing this, ask the individual if he, or she, would also like to receive Christ and have assurance of eternal life.

If the person says, “Yes,” show the following verses and explain each one as instructed below:

1. I John 5:13-You can have assurance of eternal life. Eternal life is Jesus in your heart (John 17:3). Eternal life results in peace now (John 10:10 and 10:17) and certainty of heaven after you die (John 14:1-3).
2. Romans 3:23-The greatest problem of man is sin. We are all sinners. Because of sin we have a great barrier that separates us from God.
3. Romans 6:23- “The wages of sin is death.” This means that the end result of our sin is death. Death is separation from God. This means that our life now will be without peace, joy and the certainty of eternal life. It will be a tense life, empty, scarred by fear and a guilty conscience. It will also be a life separated from heaven and the presence of God for all eternity.
4. Romans 5:8- Christ died for our sins. Christ paid the price (wages) for my sins and also for your sins by dying in our place.
5. Romans 8:9&10 and 10: 9&10- To receive Christ, you must accept Him as your Lord and Savior. This means that you should be willing to allow Christ to control your life. It also means that to receive Christ means to trust Him. To trust means to quit trusting other things and to put all your faith in Jesus Christ.

A NEW LIFE

Thomas Wade Akins

Pioneer Evangelism Series

WHO ARE YOU?

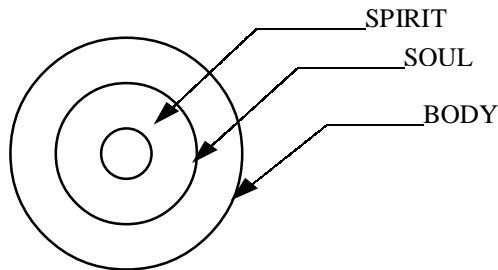
A New Life - Lesson 1

INTORDUCTION:

Who are you? Why do you exist? What is the purpose of your life? Why were you born? What is the root of many of your problems? What is going to happen to you when you die?

In I Thessalonians 5:23 the Bible says, “May God himself, the God of peace, sanctify you through and through. May your whole spirit, soul and body be kept blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.”

Man is divided into three parts: body, soul, and spirit. Observe the following diagram:



- 1. What is the body?** Your body is the house for your soul and your spirit. The Bible teaches us in Genesis 2:7 that, “The Lord God formed the man from the dust of the ground . . .” Your body is important. In I Corinthians 6:13 the Bible teaches that we should use our bodies to glorify God. The Bible says that, at the end of the world, God will resurrect your body and you will have an immortal body. I Corinthians 15:20 says, “But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, the first fruits of those who have fallen asleep.” Therefore, the Biblical teaching is not reincarnation, but resurrection. Every day your body is slowly becoming older and one day your heart will stop. Certainly your body will die and return to dust until Jesus Christ returns and resurrects it so you can appear before the throne of God on Judgment day.

2. **What is the soul?** The New Testament was written originally in the Greek language and the word “soul” is psyche. Our word in English is “psyche.” This is the root of the word “psychology.” Your soul is divided into three parts:

A) **Mind:** You have the capacity to think.

B) **Emotions:** You are capable of feeling love, anger, hate, bitterness, compassion, etc.

C) **Will:** You have the capacity to choose and make decisions. In making decisions you use your will.

3. **What is the spirit?** The Bible says in John 4:24 that, “God is Spirit.” In Genesis 1:27 it says, “So God created man in His own image. In the image of God He created him; male and female He created them.”

What does the phrase mean, “God created man in His own image?” This means that when you were born, God gave you a spirit. An animal does not have a spirit because it was not created in the image of God.

Your spirit is that part of you that can communicate with the living God. God gave you the capacity to have fellowship with Him.

The Bible teaches us that we are born with a physically empty spirit and that only God can fill it. Do you know why? Because God is Holy! When Jesus met Nicodemus, He said, “No one can see the Kingdom of God unless he is born again.” If a man has not experienced a new birth in His spirit, he has tension in his life and in his home, guilt in his mind, fear to live and to die, and a big emptiness in his spirit.

Perhaps you feel a big emptiness in your interior, in your spirit, or in other words in your heart.

In our next lesson you will learn more about how to have peace, happiness, a complete spirit (filled with God), and how you can have abundant life on Earth and eternal life in Heaven. God created you. You are a person of value. God loves you because you are created in His image and your purpose is to glorify the Lord with your life.

QUESTIONS

Please answer the questions. The questions below should be answered with “T” for true and “F” for false. Circle the correct answer.

1. (T) (F) - Man is composed of three parts.
2. (T) (F) - The body of man will live forever.
3. (T) (F) - The soul is the mind, emotions, and will.
4. (T) (F) - An animal has a spirit.
5. (T) (F) - Everyone needs to be born again.

GOD'S PURPOSE

A New Life - Lesson 2

INTRODUCTION

God loves you. You were created in His image and you are an important person- worthy and with value. What is your opinion about yourself? Are you a person who loves himself? If you are not, then it will be very difficult for you to love other people. It all begins when you realize that God really is love, and he really loves you. John 3:16 says, “For God so loved the world (you) that he gave his one and only Son that whoever believes in Him shall not perish but have eternal life.”

- 1. GOD'S PURPOSE FOR YOUR LIFE.** What is God's purpose for you? Why were you born? The Bible says in I John 5:13, “I write these things (the Bible) to you who believe in the name of the Son of God, so that you may know that you may have eternal life.” In other words, God's desire is to give you eternal life with assurance. He said, “That you may know that you have eternal life.” If you died tonight, do you know that you would go to heaven with Jesus for all eternity? According to the Bible, you may have absolute assurance of this. Read I John 5:13 again.
- 2. WHAT IS ETERNAL LIFE?** Jesus, in John 17:3, defines eternal life as this, “Now this is eternal life: that they may know you, the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom you have sent.” In English we have a very important preposition: the preposition of. We can know something or someone, or we can know of something or someone. For example, you can know something of the president of the United States, or you can know him personally. The word “know”, without the preposition, means that you have an intimate relationship with someone such as you know your wife, husband, or children. Maybe you know many things of Jesus Christ, but do you know him personally in your heart?

3. TWO RESULTS OF ETERNAL LIFE:

1. When you really know Jesus as your Lord and Savior your interior overflows with love, forgiveness and real life. Jesus says in John 10:10, "I have come that they may have life and have it abundantly." This is eternal life now.
2. When you have eternal life, the Bible says that you will live in heaven with Jesus forever after you die. Jesus says in John 14:1-2, "Do not let your hearts be troubled. Trust in God; trust also in me. In my Father's house there are many rooms; if it were not so I would have told you . . ."

CONCLUSION:

God loves you and wants to give you a new life, a transformed life, a life of peace, real love, total forgiveness, and eternal life. In the next lesson, you will learn more about how to know Christ and how to have assurance of eternal life.

QUESTIONS

Answer the questions below choosing (T) for true and (F) for false, and circle the correct answer.

1. (T) (F) - The Bible teaches in I John 5:13 that it is impossible to have assurance of eternal life.
2. (T) (F) - Eternal life is to know Jesus Christ personally in your heart.
3. (T) (F) - One of the results of eternal life is a new life with peace in your interior through Jesus Christ, and these results can be received now.
4. (T) (F) - Another result of eternal life is having assurance that you will go to heaven after you die.

OUR NEED - Part I

A New Life - Lesson 3

INTRODUCTION

In the last lesson, you learned that the Lord God loves you and He wants to give you a new life, a transformed life, and AN eternal life with Jesus Christ our Lord. The first step to knowing Christ and receiving Him in your heart is to understand the truth of this lesson.

1. **WHY DO THE MAJORITY OF PEOPLE NOT HAVE ASSURANCE OF ETERNAL LIFE?** Why do the majority of people have an empty spirit? The primary problem is sin. We do not like this word, but it is a real word and it is used many times in the Bible. The Bible says in Romans 3:23 that, “all have sinned and are separated from God.”
2. **WHAT IS SIN?** The authors of the Bible chose different terms to best express the particular aspect of sin that they wanted to emphasize. In the Old Testament, there are Hebrew words such as those which mean: to commit iniquity, trespass, distort, do wrong, be perverted, do evil, cause suffering, cause misery, be unjust, displease God and refuse to obey.
In the New Testament, there is one Greek word that means to fall short of the goal, a bad action, a perverted act, a scandalous motive, and to sin against God. Other words in the New Testament for sin mean: unfaithfulness, disbelief, lack of control, transgression and violation of the law of God. In other words, we can see that sin is disobeying God.
3. **TWO WAYS MAN IS A SINNER:**
 - A. The Bible teaches that we are sinners by nature. Psalms 51:5 says, “Surely I was sinful at birth, sinful from the time my mother conceived me.”
Have you noticed that you do not need to teach children to sin or to do wrong? I have three children and I have never taught them to sin or to do wrong. They have taken classes

in science, math and English, but they have never taken lessons in how to do wrong. Why? The Bible teaches us that we are sinners by nature.

- B. The Bible teaches us that we are sinners by choice. This means that we make a free choice to do wrong. God gave us the 10 commandments in Exodus 20.

God says, “You shall have no other gods besides ME.
You shall not have idols or images in your house.
You shall not commit adultery or sexual immorality.
You shall not lie, etc.

In the next lesson you will learn about the consequences of sin and our only hope.

QUESTIONS

Answer the questions below choosing (T) for true and (F) for false. Circle the correct answer.

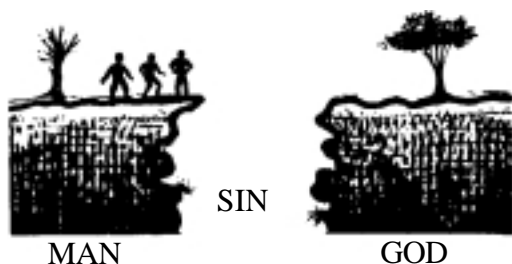
1. (T) (F) - The majority of people have assurance of eternal life.
2. (T) (F) - The greatest problem of man is a lack of money.
3. (T) (F) - The greatest problem of man is sin.
4. (T) (F) - Sin separates God and man.
5. (T) (F) - You have absolute assurance of eternal life.

OUR NEED - Part II

A New Life - Lesson 4

INTRODUCTION

In the last lesson, you learned that the Lord God loves you and that He is holy. The word holy means “separated.” This means that God does not have sin; however, man is a sinner. There exists a barrier between God and man: this barrier is sin.



The Bible says in Romans 6:23, “The wages of sin is death.” When you work for a month, you receive wages. What are the characteristics of the wages of sin?

- 1. Death is separation from God now on Earth.** Perhaps you have a deep emptiness in your heart. Instead of peace, perhaps you have tension. In place of love, maybe you have loneliness. In place of hope, you have fear - fear of life and fear of death. Maybe you appear happy on the outside, but on the inside you are empty and have no purpose for your life. Maybe, no one knows this but you.
- 2. Death is separation from God, for all eternity, in hell.** The Bible does not teach, and Jesus never taught, about the existence of purgatory. Some churches and people teach that purgatory is a place where the souls of the faithful are purified after death. They teach that it is a place where one goes to get ready to go to heaven. Jesus says in Luke 16:26, “That there is a great gap between heaven and hell.” Jesus clearly teaches in Luke 16:19-31 that death means hell.

The Bible says in Hebrews 9:27, “Just as man is destined to die once, and after that to face judgment.” In other words, you will die only once (there is no such thing as reincarnation) and afterwards will be the judgment of God.

CONCLUSION:

Sin is a serious problem, and its consequences are death. Death is separation from God now while you are still alive and after you die.

In the next lesson you will learn the only solution for your sins.

QUESTIONS

Answer the questions below choosing (T) for true and (F) for false. Circle the correct answer.

1. (T) (F) - God is holy.
2. (T) (F) - Man is holy.
3. (T) (F) - The wages of sin are death.
4. (T) (F) - The Bible teaches that purgatory exists.
5. (T) (F) - Death is separation from God now as well as in hell for all eternity.

GOD'S PROVISION

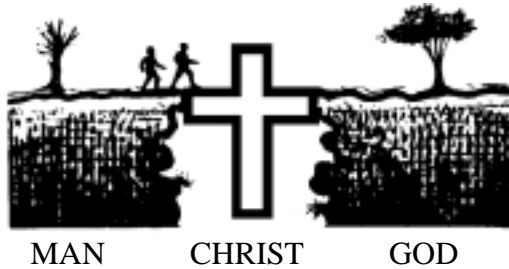
A New Life - Lesson 5

INTRODUCTION

In the last lesson, you learned that God loves you, that He is holy and that man is a sinner. You also learned that there are two consequences for sin. The Bible says in Romans 6:23, “The wages of sin is death.” Death is separation from God in two ways. First, it is separation from God now, in this world. Second, it is eternal separation in hell, after we die. In this lesson, you will learn the only solution to man’s sin problem.

- 1. THE PRICE OF SIN.** The price of every sin that you have committed or will commit is, according to Romans 6:23, death. This means that the only way to eliminate the barrier of sin in your life is for someone else to die for your sin. The Bible says in Romans 5:8, “But God demonstrates His own love for us in this: while we were yet sinners Christ died for us.”
- 2. JESUS CHRIST PAID THE PRICE FOR YOUR SINS.** Jesus Christ paid the price for your sins with His blood when He died on the cross. I John 1:7 says that, “the blood of Jesus, His son, purifies us from all sin.” Many people are trying to reach God through:
 - a. Good works
 - b. Religion
 - c. Baptism
 - d. The Eucharist (Communion)
 - e. Prayers to religious figures
 - f. Mass
 - g. Angels
 - h. Saints
 - i. Re-incarnation
 - j. Spirits invocations

However, these efforts do not have any power to eliminate sin. The Bible clearly explains that there is only one Lord, Savior and Mediator between man and God. His name is Jesus. I Timothy 2:5-6 says, “For there is one God and one Mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus who gave Himself as a ransom for all men.”



After Jesus Christ died for our sins, He resurrected from death. Do you believe that Jesus Christ is the only Lord, Savior, and Mediator between you and God?

In the next lesson you will learn how you may receive Christ in your spirit (heart) and have eternal life.

QUESTIONS

Answer the questions below choosing (T) for true and (F) for false. Circle the correct answer.

1. (T) (F) - The price of sin is death.
2. (T) (F) - The death of Christ through His blood is the only way to eliminate the sin of man.
3. (T) (F) - The act of baptism can eliminate sin.
4. (T) (F) - The Eucharist can eliminate sin.
5. (T) (F) - Jesus Christ is our only Lord, Savior and Mediator, and only He can forgive our sins.

OUR RESPONSE

A New Life - Lesson 6

INTRODUCTION

In the last lesson, you learned that Jesus Christ shed His blood to pay the price for your sins. You learned that no other thing, person, or effort has the ability to eliminate sins: only Jesus Christ. He paid the price for your sins. You do not need to pay anything. This is how Jesus offers you a new and eternal life.

Perhaps you know everything about Jesus Christ in your mind, but the Bible says you must receive Him in your spirit (heart). He must leave your mind, and enter your heart. At the same time that He does this, He forgives your past, present, and future sins. John 1:12 says, “Yet to all who received Him, to those who believed in His name, He gave the right to become children of God.”

What you should do to receive Christ:

1. **REPENTANCE.** Mark 1:15 says, “Repent and believe the good news . . .” The word “repentance” means “change your mind.” In other words, you should be willing to change your mind about sin and allow Christ to enter your heart to change and transform your life. You yourself have no power to change your own life. Are you ready to let Christ come into your life and change it? In other words, you must recognize that only Christ is able to change your life. Are you ready to change the direction of your life for Jesus? Are you ready to abandon your sins, give your life to Christ, and allow Him to control you? Are you ready to let Christ be the Master and change your life?
2. **FAITH.** Mark 1:15 says, “Believe the good news.” Almost everyone says, “I have faith in Jesus.” But, there is a real faith and a false faith. The Bible says in James 2:19 that “the demons believe in Jesus.” We know, however, that the demons are not saved.

3. **WHAT IS REAL FAITH?** Real faith is the faith that saves. The word “faith” means “to trust”. The faith that saves is one that does not believe in anything else except Jesus for salvation. The words “faith” or “to believe” mean to surrender your life to Christ so that you may be one with Him.
4. **RECEIVE CHRIST.** Are you ready to confess Christ as your only Lord, Master, and Boss? Are you ready to allow him to transform and control your life? This is repentance! Are you ready to stop trusting in other things, such as a good life, good works, Mary, angels, witches, idols, images, or baptism, and place all your faith Jesus Christ alone? This is real faith!

ONLY JESUS CHRIST SAVES!

CONCLUSION

Jesus Christ died on the cross for your sins, and three days later He resurrected. He is alive today, and wants to come into your life. Do you agree that Jesus Christ is your only Lord, Savior, and Mediator? Are you ready to give your life to Christ, and allow him to transform you and give you eternal life?

The Bible says in Romans 10:13 that, “All who call upon the name of the Lord will be saved.” You may receive Christ in your life right now by faith. You can ask Christ to come into your life through a prayer.

If this is your desire, say this prayer right now with all sincerity from your heart to Jesus. Tell him:

“Lord, I am a sinner. I am controlling my life. I deserve death and hell. I believe that you Lord are my only Lord and Savior. I am ready to forsake my sins, and allow You to control my life. I am ready to quit trusting in other things for my salvation. Jesus, come into my heart right now, change my life, give me a new life, and give me ETERNAL LIFE. Amen.”

QUESTIONS

Answer the questions below, choose (Y) for “YES” and (N) for “NO.” Circle the correct answer:

- 1. (T) (F) - Do you believe Jesus heard your prayer?
- 2. (T) (F) - If you believe this, then according to the Bible, is Jesus Christ in your heart right now?
- 3. (T) (F) - If you were to die tonight, do you know where you would spend eternity?

If by faith, you prayed this prayer and accepted Jesus into your life, please fill out the questions below:

- 1. Describe your life before you really accepted Jesus!

- 2. Where did you really quit trusting other things, and give your life completely to Jesus? (For example, in a public plaza, at an open-air crusade, watching a film about Jesus, reading a track, through a correspondence Bible study, etc.) Be specific.

3. How is your life now? (For example, has the emptiness left? Are you sure Christ is in your life? Do you have peace in your heart now?)

SIX TRUTHS FOR THE NEW CONVERT

A New Life - Lesson 7

INTRODUCTION

The Bible says in Colossians 2:6, “Just as you received Christ Jesus as Lord, continue to live in Him.” In this lesson, you will learn how to live in fellowship with Christ.

When you were born physically you were born only once. When you receive Christ you are born spiritually, and again you are born only once. This is what John 3 call, “the new birth.” Physically you cannot be reborn every Sunday and this is also true with your spiritual birth.

TRUTH 1- ASSURANCE OF SALVATION AND ETERNAL LIFE

What is eternal life? John 17: 3 says, “Now this is eternal life: that they may know you, the only true God and Jesus Christ whom you have sent.” In other words, eternal life is Jesus in your heart (spirit). This means that when Jesus enters your life, He will give you a new life and you will live eternally with Him in heaven.

First John 5:12 says, “He who has the Son has life. He who does not have the Son of God does not have life.”

What happens when you sin after you receive Christ? You do not lose your salvation! Let me explain. I have three children, and sometimes they disobey me. Do you think that I make them leave forever? Of course not! They are my children and I love them. What I do is correct them, teach them, and discipline them. The Bible says in Hebrews 12:7-8, “Endure hardship as discipline. God is treating you as sons. For what son is not disciplined by his father. If you are not disciplined (and everyone undergoes discipline), then you are illegitimate children and not true sons.”

The Bible says in John 1:12, “To those who believed in His name, He gave the right to become children of God.” Therefore, a son of God will be corrected when he sins. If not, you aren’t really a son

of God. But a true son cannot lose his salvation because he has eternal life.

If you sin after you receive Christ, God will discipline you in order to train you to walk in the right ways. He will not take away your salvation. Your salvation is eternal and eternal means forever.

TRUTH 2- BE BAPTIZED!

Jesus says in Matthew 28:19, “Therefore, go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit. And teaching them to do everything I have commanded you.”

Maybe you were baptized when you were a baby. Jesus says that only those who are his followers have the right to be baptized. You were not a follower of Christ when you were a baby. You did not know anything about Jesus. You only became a follower of Christ when you accepted Him in your life through faith and repentance.

Why shouldn't you be baptized as a baby? Because baptism is a symbol (a means of identification) that you are a follower of Christ.

In the Bible all of the followers were baptized by immersion after they received Christ. What is immersion? When someone baptizes you they will put your whole body under water momentarily. Why? Because this is a symbol of the death, burial and the resurrection of Jesus. You cannot do this when you are a baby, but you should do this after you receive Christ.

Romans 6:3-4 says, “Or don't you know that all of us who were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into His death, we were therefore buried with Him through baptism into death in order that, just as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, we too may live a new life.”

The water does not save us. Only Jesus Christ saves. Your baptism is the first symbol that you really are a follower of Christ. If you do not know where to be baptized, ask your pioneer, or write a letter to the author of this study explaining where you have been saved and he will indicate a church to you.

TRUTH 3- READ YOUR BIBLE

Psalms 119:105 says, “Your word is a lamp unto my feet and a light for my path.” The Bible is the Word of God. The first part is called the Old Testament. The second part is the New Testament. The word “testament” means “a covenant.”

How should you read your Bible? The Bible is a love letter from God to you. Read your Bible using this method:

1. Begin reading a book, for example, the book of John
2. Read the first verse
3. Ask God to show you a spiritual truth in this verse. For example, John 1:1 says, “In the beginning was the word, and the word was with God, and the word was God.”

What are the spiritual truths found in this verse?

- a. The world was created by the word.
 - b. The word was, and is, God (verse 14 later tells us that the word is Jesus).
4. Read each verse or paragraph using this method and let God speak to you about who He is, about the sins in your life, orders for you to obey, etc.

TRUTH 4- PRAYER

God says in Luke 18:1 that we should pray always and not give up. How can you pray? It is important that you have time alone with God. Begin your time using this method:

1. Reading of the Bible- Use the method of step 3 for 5 minutes.
2. Praise- say, “Lord Father, I love you because . . .”
3. Thanksgiving- “I thank you Lord because . . .”
4. Intercession- “Lord I pray for my son Jeff, because he needs . . . (continue to pray for people who have not received Christ in their lives). Make a list of people. Put some of these names on a list for Sunday, Monday, Tuesday, etc., and pray for them on these days.

5. Supplication- Tell God your needs.
6. Confession- Remain silent for a time, and ask the Lord to bring to your mind any sin, bad thing in your life. First John 1:9 says, “If we confess our sins he is faithful and just to forgive us of our sins and cleanse us from our unrighteousness.” This was written for people who have already received Christ. When you are dirty, you must take a bath. Confession for the Christian is a spiritual bath.

TRUTH 5 - BECOME A MEMBER OF AN EVANGELICAL CHURCH

Ephesians 1:23 says, “For the church is the body of Christ.” Jesus Christ is the head of the church. Ephesians 1:22 says, “And God placed all things under his feet and appointed him to be the head of everything for the church.”

The word Peter means “rock.” Jesus Christ is referred to as a “rock.” In Matthew 16:18 God does not say that Peter is the head of the church, but that Jesus is the chief cornerstone. I Corinthians 3:11 says, “For no one can lay any other foundation other than the one already laid which is Jesus Christ.”

A church is a group of baptized believers who meet together for the purpose of:

1. Worship—they will also practice two ordinances-the Lord’s Supper and baptism
2. Evangelism
3. Discipleship
4. Human Needs ministries
5. Fellowship

Why do you need to belong to a church?

1. To praise the Lord with other brothers in Christ
2. To learn the word of God
3. To have fellowship with other believers in Christ (The church is your spiritual family.)
4. To serve others
5. To share with people who have not received Jesus

TRUTH 6- WITNESS

In Matthew 28:19 Jesus says, “Go and make disciples.” This means that each follower of Jesus should share with a lost person what happened in his life. This testimony should begin with the people in your own family. You should explain your life before you received Christ as your savior, how you realized your need for Jesus, how and when you received Christ, and what your life is like now with Christ. After doing this, ask them if they also would like to receive Christ and have assurance of eternal life.

If they say, “Yes,” show them the following verses and explain each one as instructed below:

1. I John 5:13-You can have assurance of eternal life. Eternal life is Jesus in your heart (John 17:3). Eternal life results in peace now (John 10:10 and 10:17) and certainty of heaven after you die (John 14:1-3).
2. Romans 3:23-Man’s greatest problem is sin. We are all sinners. Because of sin we have a great barrier that separates us from God.
3. Romans 6:23- “The wages of sin is death.” This means that the end result of our sin is death. Death is separation from God. This means that our life now will be without peace, joy, and the certainty of eternal life. It will be a tense life, empty, and scarred by fear and a guilty conscience. It will also be a life separated from heaven and the presence of God for all eternity.
4. Romans 5:8- Christ died for our sins. Christ paid the price (wages) for my sins and also for your sins by dying in our place.
5. Romans 8:9&10 and 10: 9&10- To receive Christ you must accept Him as your Lord and Savior. This means that you should be willing to allow Christ to control your life. It also means that to receive Christ, means to trust Him. To trust means to quit trusting other things and to put all your faith in Jesus Christ.
6. Romans 10:13 - Ask the person if he would like to give his life to Jesus. If he says, “Yes,” ask him to pray and ask God into his life right now, “because all who call upon the name of the Lord will be saved (Romans 10:13).”

GOOD NEWS FROM GOD BIBLE STUDIES
BASED ON THE GOSPEL OF JOHN

BY
Waylon Moore

Pioneer Evangelism Series

GOD’S WONDERFUL PLAN FOR YOU!

Gospel of John Bible Studies - Lesson 1

You are on earth for a purpose: to know, love, and glorify God. You can come to know God personally when you meet and know God’s Son, Jesus Christ, the Savior. The Bible reveals all the amazing gifts God gives to those who know and follow Jesus.

Some of these marvelous gifts and benefits are found below. This study is linked to the Gospel of John. Allow God to speak to you through the Bible. Think about what each verse says. Then, answer the question in your own words. Write your answer in the blank by the verse. Now, turn to John, chapter 10, and read verse 10.

1. Why did Jesus, the good Shepherd, come? John 10:10

2. What do you think Jesus means by “life ... abundantly”?

3. What kind of life does Jesus give to all who truly believe in Him?
10:28

4. What does God the Father do when we ask in prayer, using Jesus’ name? 16:23

5. What do you think it means to ask “in Jesus’ name?”

6. Why does Jesus want to answer our prayers? 16:24

_____.

7. How do we become “free” in our lives? 8:31, 32

_____.

_____.

8. What do you think Jesus means by “the truth” that makes us free?
17:17

_____.

_____.

9. How would one go about continuing in the words of Jesus? 8:31

_____.

_____.

10. In John 14:1 Jesus says to not let our

_____.

He wants those who believe in God to believe in,
_____also.

11. What is in heaven in God’s giant home? 14:2

_____.

12. What did Jesus go to do when he ascended back to heaven? 14:3

_____.

13. What will Jesus do first, after he finishes building homes for his followers
in heaven?

_____.

14. What does Jesus promise then?

_____.

_____.

15. What is impossible to buy which Jesus gives us free? 14:26

16. If we love Jesus, what are God's feelings about us? 16:27

Why not quietly bow your head in prayer right now. Thank God that He loves you, in spite of your life and sins.

The Bible tells us about two kinds of death. The first is when our body dies. The second death is spiritual death, dying without receiving Jesus in our lives. This death is a separation from God, in a place of fire called "Hell."

17. But what does Jesus promise those who are alive and who really believe in Him?

11: 26 _____

Notice the important words Martha uses to answer Jesus in John 11:27. Her sentence has in it what she believed about Jesus and his power over death. "Yes, Lord: I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world."

18. When we understand Jesus' words, what happens inside of us?

19. As Jesus fills those who believe, we receive

that empowers us to live for Christ. 1:16.

Grace is the gift of God that we can never merit or earn. It is getting God's spiritual riches, through Jesus, in exchange for our sinful poverty. We are saved from our sins by grace, never by works. "For by grace

are ye saved, through faith, and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God” (Ephesians 2:8,9).

20. John gives us a picture of Jesus as God’s Lamb. What did Jesus do about our sins on the Cross? 1: 29

21. There is a single word in John 1:12 that tells what it means to “believe” in Jesus. To believe in Jesus means to

Him into your heart as the Lord Jesus Christ.

In this study you have read of God’s loving purpose for your life, and some of the wonderful benefits of knowing Him. Those who truly put their faith in Jesus are given abundant life, eternal life, answers to prayer, freedom, a home in heaven, joy, peace, and grace. Also, God will forgive and take away their sins.

When you repent of your sins, and receive Jesus, He will come into your heart as Lord forever. To repent is to turn away from your sins to follow Christ. He died for all your sins, and then rose from the grave. In the next lesson you will learn more about one of God’s gifts to you -eternal life.

THE POWER OF LIVING FOREVER

Gospel of John Bible Studies - Lesson 2

Many people think eternal life is something we experience after we die. Others think eternal life is the product of doing enough good things to overcome all the sins we commit. This is not true. Few people realize what Jesus tells us again and again: that we can know for sure that we have eternal life now.

Let's look at the Gospel of John in the Bible. Turn to chapter 17, verse 3. Read the verse, and answer the question in your own words. Write it in the blank space.

1. What is eternal life? 17:3

_____.

2. How do you think we can “know” God and Jesus? 7:17

_____.

Eternal life is not just a promise about the future. Eternal life is wrapped up in a Person, Jesus Christ. To have Jesus as your personal Lord and Savior is to have eternal life.

3. What is the path to finding Jesus? 5:39

_____.

4. Who has the words of eternal life for all? 6:67-69

_____.

5. If you don't have eternal life what will happen? 3:15

_____.

6. How do Jesus' sheep get eternal life? 10:28

_____.

PIONEER EVANGELISM

7. What happens when we choose our will over the will of God?
12:25 _____
How do we keep eternal life?

8. Jesus says, “Without me _____”
15:5
9. Who has the power over all and can give eternal life?

Read John 3:16 twice. Then answer the following questions:

10. Who loves the people in the world?

11. What did God do because of His love for you?

12. Who is the “begotten son” of God?

13. Who may have everlasting life?

14. Those who do not believe in God’s only Son Jesus will

15. How many people can have everlasting life?

16. How long do you think everlasting life is?

17. Why does God give us everlasting life?

18. How do you keep from perishing?

19. In John 5:24, Jesus says something very important. Fill in the blanks.

To have Jesus' everlasting life one must first _____

His word, and _____ on Him.

20. Then Jesus promises three important things:

You have _____

You shall not _____

You have _____

Everyone can know when he passes from death to life, just as one knows the date he gets married, or his birthday. Have you as yet passed from death to life? You can know.

21. Jesus describes eternal life as a

4:13,14

22. Then how does one get eternal life? v. 14

23. What does it mean to drink water in John 4:14? Circle best answer:

- a) drink real water
- b) to believe in Jesus
- c) dig a well
- d) be baptized

24. Jesus uses another word picture to describe Himself in John 6:47, 48, and 51. Jesus is

List 2 qualities that come to mind when you see, touch, and eat BREAD.

- 1. _____
- 2. _____

25. How would each of these qualities relate to Jesus?

26. If we believe on the living Christ what will we have? 6:47

You have learned that eternal life and everlasting life are the same. Obtaining eternal life results from knowing Jesus personally. He is eternal life! You have found that eternal life is forever. No one will perish who has everlasting life. Jesus is your Living Water and your Bread of Life.

In the next study you will learn how to keep from dying from the world's worst disease

THE TRAGEDY OF SIN

Gospel of John Bible Studies - Lesson 3

In each human being is a deadly disease -sin- which infects those you love, and is transmitted from parent to child. Some people think they are getting away with it. However, God judges your sin. Thankfully, God has provided a remedy for sin.

Let's look again at the Gospel of John and also at some key verses from other places in the Bible. Remember to read the verse carefully, before writing your answer in the blank space.

1. John calls Jesus the "Lamb of God." What did Jesus do about our sin? John 1:29

2. Who is Jesus? What did Jesus claim by calling God his "Father"? 5:17-18

3. Jesus claim was true! How did religious leaders react again to Jesus calling God his "Father"? 10:31-33

Jesus forgave sins, received worship as God, was sinless, and claimed the same qualities as God. He is both God and man.

4. Who will finally judge all sinful people? 5:22, 26-27

5. What remedy for sin does Jesus suggest to a very religious man? 3:3

PIONEER EVANGELISM

Being born physically is not enough. Because of your sins you must also experience a second birth inside.

6. We need to be born again, because without Christ we are servants of _____
8:34

7. Who is the father of all those who lust and sin? 8:44
-

We have an earthly father, the Devil, who wants us in hell with him for eternity. We need a heavenly Father of love.

8. Because of not trusting our total selves to Jesus, we stand _____
3:18.

9. Read John 8:1-11. What did Jesus say to the proud religious leaders? 8:7 _____
-

Jesus forgave the sinful woman. He saw true repentance in her heart. This is how He relates to everyone who is honest about his sin, and desires a new birth.

“For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God”
(Romans 3:23).

10. According to this verse, how many people have sinned?
-
-

11. What is sin? Sin is (circle all correct answers)

- a) transgressing God’s Law
 - b) all unrighteousness
 - c) *coming short of the glory of God*
-

- d) rebellion against God
- e) unbelief; it makes God a liar
- f) living my own way, doing what I want, against God's will.

Sin is rebellion toward God characterized by an attitude of indifference. All the answers in question #11 are Bible definitions of sin. Religious people go to hell. Good people go to hell. Bad people go to hell. Only forgiven people go to heaven. Getting forgiveness for sin involves turning from sin in repentance, and surrendering to Christ Jesus as Lord.

“For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord” (Romans 6:23)

12. What wage does sin pay each of us?

13. Do we need to work for salvation from God?

14. Then, how do we get eternal life?

“For by grace are you saved through faith, and that not of ourselves. It is the gift of God, not of works, lest any many should boast.” (Ephesians 2:8,9). From this verse answer:

15. How are we saved from hell?

16. How do we get this eternal life?

Grace is a gift, as is faith. You cannot work for grace.

PIONEER EVANGELISM

17. What does Jesus promise to all who refuse to follow Him as Lord and Savior? _____

18. John 8:24

19. Who can free us up from sin's power? 8:36

20. What did Jesus ask those who knew him best on earth? 8:46

Jesus had never sinned. He was tempted, however, just as you are. Jesus loves you. His love caused him to choose to take your sins on Himself on the cross.

"it is appointed unto men once to die, but after that the judgment"
(Hebrews 9:27).

21. What two appointments will we all keep?

a. _____

b. _____

Those who choose Jesus' gift of eternal life will win over these two terrible happenings. In the next lesson you will discover how Jesus took your sins and their consequences on Himself.

ACTIONS AND CONSEQUENCES

Gospel of John Bible Studies - Lesson 4

It is impossible to sin without punishment. You can't escape the eyes of God. "For the ways of man are before the eyes of the Lord, and He pondereth all his goings" (Proverbs 5:21). Read each verse. Write the answer in your words.

1. What has the heavenly Father done about judging us? 5:22

2. Why is the Son of God, Jesus, our judge? 5:23

3. What two things has God the Father given His Son Jesus? 5:26,27

a.

b.

4. What kind of judgment does Jesus provide? 8:16

5. When judgment came, what happened to Satan, "the prince of this world? 12:31

6. What triggered this loss of Satan's power and position on earth? 12:32

PIONEER EVANGELISM

7. When was Jesus “lifted up”? 12:33

*“So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God”
(Romans 14:12).*

8. How many people will give an account to God on judgment day?

9. Whose actions will we be accountable for on judgment day?

God has a record keeper, like an invisible video camera traveling with you 24 hours a day. He knows your motives, thoughts, words, and actions. There is a judgment day.

“You have heard. - ‘Do not commit adultery.’ But I tell you that anyone who looks at a woman lustfully has already committed adultery with her in his heart.” Matthew 5:27

10. When does adultery begin in a person? (Circle one answer)

- a) When one looks and desires?
- b) When someone commits the act of sin?

Read these words from Jesus: *“For out of the heart come a) evil thoughts, b) murder, c) adultery, d) sexual immorality, e) theft, f) false testimony, g) slander. These are what make a man unclean.”* Matthew 15:19,20.

11. Put each deadly sin in your own words:

- a _____
- b _____
- c _____
- d _____
- e _____
- f _____
- g _____

12. Where do these sins come from?

13. Which of these sins is the most tempting to you?

These terrible sins can destroy a marriage, our children, or our work. But they are not the worst sin. There is an unforgivable sin that sends us to hell.

14. What is this great, unforgivable sin? John 8:24

Jesus Christ was complete God, and complete Man. Let's look closely at what He did for us on the cross. Read the following verses from Hebrews, 10:10-19. "By that will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all. And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering often times the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins, but this Man, after He had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God ... For by one offering He hath perfected forever them that are sanctified ... And your sins and iniquities will I remember no more. Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin".

15. See back to verse 10: How many times does Jesus have to die to pay for our sins? _____

"Sanctified" means "to be made holy, set apart." What Jesus did was so powerful that it cannot be duplicated. No sacrifice today can add to what He already completed. All our sins were put on Christ, and He died in our place. The word "Lord" is used over 40 times in the Gospel of John. Jesus bought with His love the right to be our Lord, our "boss."

PIONEER EVANGELISM

16. What cannot take away our sins today? vv. 11

17. What did the Man, Christ Jesus, do on the cross? vv. 12

18. How long does this sacrifice last?

19. When someone sits down, it may be because he is tired, or because he has finished his work. Why did Jesus sit down by God's side?

20. How many times must Jesus die to make us complete and holy before God? v. 14

21. Because of the blood Jesus shed for our sins, how many of our sins will God remember? vv. 17

Jesus died for all, but only those who receive Jesus as their Savior and Lord benefit from His death on the cross.

22. Since God accepted Jesus' sacrifice as the complete remission (forgiveness) of our sins, does Jesus need to be sacrificed again and again today in a mass? Why?

GOD'S SOLUTION TO OUR SINS

Gospel of John Bible Studies - Lesson 5

Something happened when Jesus died on the cross that has never happened before or since. Let us discover the heart of the cross as we look into that event in John's gospel, Chapters 19-20.

The Death of Jesus- Read John, chapter 19:15-37

1. The ruler Pilate gave Jesus to the soldiers to be
_____ 19:16
2. What do you think the soldiers thought?

3. What might Jesus have been feeling?

4. What was Jesus carrying?

5. What did the soldiers do to Jesus? vv. 18 and 23

6. How was Jesus "dressed" hanging on the cross? 19:23

7. What did Jesus see and say while hanging on the cross? 19:26,27

Then said Jesus, "Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do" (Luke 23:34).

PIONEER EVANGELISM

8. According to this verse, how did Jesus respond to those who wrongfully murdered him?

9. Read verse 30: What were Jesus' last words on the cross?

10. What did He mean?

“He (God) made him (Jesus) who knew no sin to be sin on our behalf, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him” (2 Corinthians 5:21).

11. What two things does the verse say about Jesus?

a.

b.

The Apostle Peter wrote. *“For Christ also died for sins, once for all, the just for the unjust, in order that he might bring us to God.”* (1 Peter 3:18).

12. Christ died for our

13. How many times did Jesus have to die?

14. What did His death provide for us?

“Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness; by whose stripes ye were healed” (I Peter 3:24).

15. What did Jesus take on Himself hanging on the cross?

16. And we get healing and forgiveness through

Turn to John chapter 15:9,13.

17. Why did Jesus choose to lay down his life for us?

The Burial of Jesus - Read John 19:38-42

1. Who were the friends of Jesus who cared for his body? vv. 38,39

2. List three things they did with the body of Jesus?

- a. _____
- b. _____
- c. _____

The Resurrection of Jesus - Read John 20:1-31

1. What did Mary Magdalene do?

PIONEER EVANGELISM

2. What did Peter do?

3. Whom did Jesus show Himself to? vv. 11 -29

4. What did Thomas do? vv. 24-25:

26-29

5. What have you done with Jesus?

6. Why was the Gospel of John written? v. 31

Paul the Apostle summarized it, “For I delivered to you as of first importance what I also received, that Christ died for our sins, according to the Scriptures, and that He was buried, and that He was raised on the third day according to the Scriptures...” (I Corinthians 15:3,4, NAS).

Jesus was God when His heavenly Father sent Him to earth to live as a man. God’s Son experienced all that it meant to be a human being, yet He did not sin. Jesus died on the cross, as a substitute for your sins because of His great love for you. He was separated from God by your sins. He became a perfect sacrifice that cannot be copied or duplicated today.

Jesus was buried in a tomb. God accepted Christ’s death as full payment for your sins, by raising Him from the dead. Jesus Christ is alive, and by His Holy Spirit He will come into the hearts of all who repent of their sins and surrender their lives, by receiving Him as Savior and Lord. He stays with the believer forever.

THE MOST AWESOME GIFT!

Gospel of John Bible Studies - Lesson 6

It is never enough to know something. You must act on that knowledge. It is wonderful to be offered a gift. But you cannot enjoy the gift unless you receive it from the giver, and use it. God offers the awesome gift of eternal life, but you must receive the gift by accepting His Son, Jesus Christ. Read the following verses, and answer the questions in your own words.

We use the word “believe” every day. “I believe in my family,” or, “I believe in this political candidate.” That is not what the word “believe” means in the Bible. God really desires that we believe Him! But what does it mean to believe?

1. What is the only “work” God accepts for salvation? 6:28,29
-

Here are a number of verses that demonstrate what it truly means to believe in Jesus Christ.

Jesus said: “Behold I stand at the door and knock. If any one hear my voice and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me (Revelation 3:20)

2. Where is Jesus standing?
 3. What does ‘the door’ mean in this picture verse?
 4. Why is Jesus “knocking” at the door?
-

5. What two things must happen before Jesus will come into the heart?
- a) _____
- b) _____

6. What does Jesus promise to do to any open heart?
- _____

Eating together can be a time of deep bonding and friendship. The Bible contains your spiritual “food.” Jesus wants to have a time of knowing and enjoying being together each day. You need to eat together with God as you study God’s Word. Then you talk with Him in prayer.

“That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and believe in thine heart that God hath raised Him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.” (Romans 10:9).

7. What action words illustrate in this verse what it means to believe in Christ?

_____ with your _____ ,
and _____ in your _____ .

8. Explain the difference between believing in your head, and believing in your heart

“For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved”(Romans 10:13).

9. What action idea here means to believe in Christ and be saved?

10. If you have not already believed in Christ, what is your state before God? 3:18

11. Why don't all people receive God's Son as Savior and Lord? 3:19, 20

Let's look at the lives of four people who believed in Jesus. Read John chapter 4.

12. Who did Jesus claim to be? vv. 25,26

13. When the immoral woman believed in Jesus, what did her faith lead her to do?

14. The story of the nobleman demonstrates the power of believing in Christ. 4:49-53. How do we know the nobleman believed in Jesus about his son?

The test of true faith is obedience to the Lord Jesus.

15. What did Jesus tell the woman he rescued from death, who had committed adultery? 8: 11

PIONEER EVANGELISM

16. To believe in Jesus, the Light, is to _____ and not walk in darkness. 8:12

17. What does Jesus promise to those who follow Him? 8:12

18. After Jesus had anointed the eyes of the man born blind how do we know the man believed? 9:7,8

19. After the religious rulers kicked out the man Jesus had just healed, Jesus found him. When Jesus revealed Himself, what action showed the belief of the man once blind? 9:35-39

To “repent” means a “change of attitude that results in a change of direction ... a change of life.” To repent is turn from sin’s deadly grip on our lives, and seek Christ for forgiveness and victory over all sin. To “repent” is to change our attitude about Jesus Christ. He is no longer a little baby in the Christmas manger, but Lord of all.

Wouldn’t you like to pray and invite Jesus into your life as Lord and Savior? Here is a prayer many have prayed: “Thank you, Lord Jesus, for dying for me on the cross. Thank you for taking my sins on yourself as my substitute. The best I know how, I turn from my sins, and I give all of myself to you, Lord Jesus. Come into my life as boss. I will follow you wherever you lead.”

After praying this prayer with all your heart, you may write your name here:

Or, if you are already certain Jesus has taken all your sins and that you will go straight to heaven, check here:

GOD'S GIFT THAT KEEPS GIVING

Gospel of John Bible Studies - Lesson 7

When you receive Jesus as Savior and Lord, He actually comes to live in your body through the Holy Spirit. "Christ -in you, the hope of glory," "...Christ liveth in me,"(Colossians 1:27; Galatians 2:20). If you've received Jesus, thank him in prayer for His life in you. Jesus is the eternal Gift who never stops giving.

"Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creation. Old things are passed away, behold all things are become new" (2 Corinthians 5:17).

1. According to this verse, where does God put us, when we receive Jesus?

2. What are we now called?

3. What does God say about our past life?

4. How does God now see us in Christ?

The Apostle Paul uses the expression "in Christ" 163 times in the New Testament. At the moment of giving your life to Christ, He came into you, and you were put into Him. This is called "union with Christ."

JESUS “I AM” SPECIAL NAMES MEET OUR NEEDS

When Jesus lives in you, He gives you all the attributes that He is Himself. His character meets your specific needs. In John’s Gospel, Jesus introduces Himself by the Old Testament name for God, “I am that I am.” Let’s learn 6 “I am” names of Jesus.

5. Whom did God send to meet the daily needs in our life? 6:32-35 & 51

6. What does the “Bread of God” provide freely for the entire world? 6,33

7. If you come to Jesus, you will never _____ . 6:35

8. If you believe on Him, you’ll never _____ . 6:35

9. What 2 action words show how to receive the strength and provision of Jesus? 6:35
_____ and
_____ .

10. Jesus said, “I am _____” 8:12

11. List three reasons you need light each day :
a. _____
b. _____
c. _____

You need both light for your eyes and light in your mind to discern good from evil. “The entrance of thy words giveth light; it giveth understanding unto the simple” (Psalm 119:130). Jesus wants you to learn His will by studying the Bible daily.

12. Think of 3 things that a shepherd would use a door for with his sheep. John 10:8-10.

- a. _____
- b. _____
- c. _____

Imagine how difficult a shepherd’s job would be without a gate to his pen.

13. How do you need to experience Jesus as a “door” in your life this week?

“The Lord is my shepherd, I shall not want” (Psalm 23:1). God is called by David, ‘my Shepherd.’ We are His sheep. Jesus claims to be God by using the same name, Shepherd.

14. Read John 10:11-17. Think of and list 3 things a good shepherd would do for a lamb:

- a. _____
- b. _____
- c. _____

15. How can Jesus, the Good Shepherd, meet a need in your life this week? _____

PIONEER EVANGELISM

Find 3 names of Jesus from John 14:6:

16. Jesus is _____ each day you follow Him.

17. Jesus is _____. You measure your job, your decisions, and your relationships by His will and Word.

18. Jesus is _____ He lives in you through His Spirit. He empowers you to live right and gives eternal life.

Though our bodies eventually die, we never die as a person. Jesus will resurrect our bodies when He returns (John 14:2-3).

19. What does Jesus call Himself? 15:5

20. To be productive what is essential for us, the branches, to do? 15:5

21. What can we do alone, without Jesus?

Repeat aloud: “*Jesus, thank you for being my Bread, Light, Door, Shepherd, Way, Truth, Light, and my Vine.*” This week memorize your favorite Scriptural name of Jesus.

OUR NEW HELPER

Jesus lives in believers through the Holy Spirit. “...*God has sent the Spirit of his Son into your hearts*” (Galatians 4:6). His Spirit gives us everything we need to follow God’s will. He also gives us power to solve our problems and conquer the Devil.

22. What invitation does Jesus give to spiritually thirsty people? 7:37

23. What happens inside us when we believe and drink?

24. To what does this “rivers of water” refer? 7:39

25. How do we get the Holy Spirit into our lives? 7:38

26. What 2 things does the Holy Spirit, God’s Comforter, do in us? 14:26

- a. _____
- b. _____

27. There are 2 names for the Holy Spirit in John 15:26. Which of these names represents an attribute of God’s Spirit that you need today?

28. Who bears witness about Jesus to those who don’t know Him?

_____ 15:26,27

29. When the Holy Spirit comes into each believer, what 4 things will He do? 16:13,14

- a. _____
- b. _____
- c. _____
- d. _____

30. The Holy Spirit shows us who the Lord Jesus is and what He can do in us. Jesus also promised that He would reveal Himself to us. What is the condition for revealing Himself? 14:21, 24

GOOD NEWS OF JESUS
BASED ON THE GOSPEL OF MATTHEW

The Story of the Life of Jesus Christ
By
Christy A. Brawner

Pioneer Evangelism Series

**How to Use “The Good News of Jesus”
and “Beginning a New Life in Christ”
Bible Stories**

- 1. Begin each meeting with a brief word of prayer asking the Lord to bring understanding to the stories.**
- 2. Read the stories to the participants or if there are available copies read the stories together using the indirect method.**
- 3. The leader should ask the oral questions at the end of the story. The purpose for these questions is to review and check for understanding of the story- NOT for elaboration or debate.**
- 4. Read the spiritual truths. Allow the group members freedom to discuss and question each spiritual truth. Be careful to NEVER argue or debate with anyone. It is not necessary at this point for the members to agree or accept the spiritual truths. It is only important that they understand the truths as they are revealed in God’s Word.**
- 5. After the spiritual truths, have a time for each person to share needs and prayer requests with the group.**
- 6. Pray specifically for each need and/or each person in the group. As the group progresses and people accept the Lord allow the members to pray for each other during this intercession time.**

THE GOOD NEWS OF JESUS

By
Christy A. Brawner

“The Birth of Jesus”- Lesson 1 **Matthew 1-2**

“So all the generations from Abraham to David are fourteen generations, from David until the captivity in Babylon are fourteen generations, and from the captivity in Babylon until the Christ are fourteen generations.” Matthew 1:17

Mary, a Jewish woman, became pregnant without having sexual relations for she conceived of the Holy Spirit. Her fiancé, being a just man, did not want to publicly humiliate her, so he decided to break off the engagement secretly. But, the same night as he was deciding to do this, an angel of the Lord appeared to him in a dream and said, “Joseph, son of David, do not be afraid to take Mary as your wife, for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Spirit. And she will bring forth a Son, and you shall call His name Jesus for He will save His people from their sins.” For Mary was to be the woman of which the prophet Isaiah spoke of in the Old Testament when he said, “Behold, the virgin shall be with child, and bear a Son, and they shall call His name Immanuel”, translated “God With Us.”

Joseph awoke from His dream and obeyed the angel. He married Mary, but they did not have sexual relations until after the birth of the baby. And Joseph named the baby Jesus, according to the instructions, which he had received from the angel. Now Jesus was born in the city of Bethlehem, which is located in the Province of Judea in the country of Israel, and the King of Judea at that time was named Herod.

There were wise men that came from the Orient to Judea following a bright star. According to their studies, this star indicated that the promised king had been born in Judea. Not knowing where exactly the Child was to be found, they went first to Herod’s palace, the king of the district of

Judea, and asked where the new king of the Jews had been born.

Herod was very disturbed by their story, and called a secret meeting with all his religious advisers and priests. He asked these men where, according to Jewish prophecy, was the promised King of the Jews to be born. The priests told him that according to Scripture, the Promised Child was to be born in Bethlehem. He then went to the wise men and asked them when exactly they had first seen the star. He asked this because he wanted to figure out exactly the birth date of the child and calculate His age.

Herod informed the wise men which city the baby was to be born. He also said, “Go and search carefully for the young Child, and when you have found Him, bring back word to me, that I may come and worship Him also.”

The wise men then left the palace and continued to follow the star to Bethlehem. The star, which they had been following, went before them and stood over the house where the young Child was. They entered the house, and immediately as they saw the Child with Mary His mother, they fell down and worshiped Him. They also gave Him valuable gifts of gold, frankincense, and myrrh.

So the wise men left this place to return to their homes in the East. But before leaving, they had a dream warning them not to return to Herod and tell him how to find the child. So they went home another way.

After they left, Joseph had another dream. In this dream, he was warned by God that Herod was going to come after the Child and that they were to flee to Egypt. So, that very night, he woke up His family and they fled immediately. They lived in Egypt until the death of Herod, this also being in fulfillment of the prophecy of the prophet Hosea where he said, “Out of Egypt I will call My Son.”

Herod, after discovering that the wise men had deceived him became very angry. He then declared that all male babies under the age of two would be murdered. It was a horrifying slaughter of all the infants in Bethlehem and the surrounding towns. But an earlier Jewish prophet named Jeremiah also had foretold this tragedy.

When Herod died, an angel appeared to Joseph and told him to

return to Israel. Joseph, however, was a little anxious because Herod's son was on the throne in Judea, so he moved his family to the neighboring province of Galilee to a city called Nazareth. Jesus spent his childhood in this town. This also was in fulfillment of the prophecy saying, "He will be called a Nazarene."

Oral Questions

1. Who is Mary?
2. To whom did the angel appear and tell what the Child was to be named?
3. Why did wise men come from the Orient to Judea?
4. Why did Herod want to find Jesus?
5. How did the wise men know they should go home another way and avoid Herod?
6. How did Herod attempt to kill the promised King of the Jews?
7. How did Joseph know he must flee the country and go to Egypt?
8. How did Joseph know when it was safe to return?
9. Why did Joseph take his family to the neighboring province of Galilee instead of Judea?
10. What is the name of the city where Jesus spent his childhood?

Spiritual Truths- Lesson 1

Matthew 1-2

1. God is faithful and always keeps His promises. Since the creation of the first man and woman, God had promised that he would send a Savior to earth. Over the years, He repeated this promise many times to many people often with many details of how this coming would be. Jesus came to earth EXACTLY as had been predicted through the Scriptures. Let us remember in the story at least one prophecy that was fulfilled through the Birth of Jesus.

*God is faithful to us in the same way. In the Bible, there are many important promises God has made about His plan for us. He will fulfill all these promises and prophecies. It is important for us to read the Scriptures and discover God's promises for our lives.

2. The Bible is the Word of God and everything in it is true. God spoke through his prophets thousands of years in advance many precise details about the birth and life of Jesus. Everything occurred EXACTLY as had been prophesied.
3. God is in control of all things. He can make things happen that are supernatural or miraculous. There are several supernatural things or miracles that happen in this story. What is at least one of these?
4. God can and does communicate to men. Some believe that God created the world but doesn't care what happens here. In what way did God communicate to men in this story? God still communicates to us today. We will learn through this study how we can have a real relationship with God.
5. God knows everything that is going to happen. But sometimes, in His Divine wisdom, He allows horrible things to occur. Herod wanted to kill the Promised King because he felt threatened by Jesus. God knew the wicked sin in Herod's heart. He knew that he was going to kill

hundreds of helpless children. Because of the disobedience and rebellion in his heart a great horror occurred. Today, sometimes many horrible things happen because of disobedience and rebellion in our lives. Do you know of a modern example where someone has been hurt because of the wickedness of another person?

6. Man can never prevail against God and win. Herod was unable to kill the Promised Child. The only thing that he accomplished was to create a horrendous tragedy in the lives of many families. Today, a lot of times, we try to defy God's laws and His will. This always brings tragedy, if not for us than for those around us who we are hurting. Can you think of a time in your own life where you did something wrong and brought tragedy into your life? Can you think of a time when you were hurt because of the rebellion of another person?
7. The priests and religious advisers knew the Scriptures concerning the Promised King, but they did not go to meet Jesus. Is it possible to be very religious, to know much about the Bible, to know much about Jesus Christ, but never know Him personally in one's heart?
8. Jesus is God with us, or Immanuel. The angel spoke these words to Joseph, which were recorded in the Scriptures by the prophet Isaiah. Many people say that Jesus was a prophet. Others say that He was an angel or a good person. But the Bible teaches us that He was "God with us."

In the next six weeks, we are going to try to discover who really is JESUS CHRIST, and what is the GOOD NEWS that He brought to earth.

THE GOOD NEWS OF JESUS

By
Christy A. Brawner

“The Baptism of Jesus”- Lesson 2 **Matthew 3-4**

Review

1. The name of Jesus’ mother was _____.
2. One miracle from Jesus’ birth was that He was born of a _____.
3. The Old Testament spoke many things about the birth of Christ; one of these was that He would be called Immanuel, which means “God _____.”
4. Herod was a _____ of Judea who tried to kill Jesus. He _____ all of the children under the age of two that lived in and around Bethlehem.
5. The wise men that went to find Jesus were following a _____. These men went home a different way than they came because God warned them through a _____ that Herod wanted to _____ Jesus.
6. Joseph left with his family in the middle of the night to Egypt because God showed him in a _____ that Herod was coming after _____.
7. Joseph knew that it was safe to return to Israel through a _____. But he did not return to Bethlehem, instead he took his family to a city called _____.
8. As He has done all throughout history, today God still keeps His _____.
9. God knows what’s in our _____ even if there is much wickedness there.

10. It is possible to be a religious person, to even know a lot about the Bible, but still never know _____ personally in one's _____.

“Repent for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.” Matthew 3:2

These were the words that were preached by a man who could be found in the desert of Judea. This man dressed in camel's hair and a leather belt. He lived eating wild honey and grasshoppers. His name was John the Baptist.

Many people from all over the area surrounding the Jordan River would go out to the desert to hear his words. Then after listening to him speak, many would be baptized in the Jordan River confessing their sins. Several of the religious leaders, those called Sadducees and Pharisees, would also go out to see what was happening in the desert. When John the Baptist saw them, he called them a “brood of vipers,” (sons of serpents) further saying that they did not fear God because they thought themselves so religious and of good heritage that they did not need to repent of their sins.

While John was preaching, Jesus came and asked John to baptize him. John did not want to at first because he thought he was too unworthy to baptize Jesus. But Jesus insisted, and the two of them entered into the waters of the Jordan River. When Jesus came up from the water, the Holy Spirit descended like a dove from heaven upon Him. Also, a very loud voice from heaven spoke saying. “This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased,”

So Jesus was taken after that by the Holy Spirit into the desert in order to be tempted by Satan. He fasted from food and water for forty days and forty nights, and after the forty days He was very hungry. It was at this time that Satan came to tempt Jesus.

The Bible tells of three temptations of Jesus in the desert. In the first temptation, Satan tried to get Jesus to turn some stones into bread, claiming that this would prove that He was God. Jesus answered him by using the written Word of God. Secondly, Satan took Him to the roof of a temple and asked Him to jump off the edge thus proving that He was God. But

Jesus answered him again using the written Word of God. Lastly, Satan transported Jesus to a mountain and said, “All these things I will give You if You will fall down and worship me.” Jesus answered him saying, “You shall worship the LORD your God, and Him only you shall serve.” With this the devil left Him, and the angels came and served Him.

After returning from the desert, Jesus heard that John the Baptist had been thrown into jail. Jesus then went to Galilee, the province north of Judea, leaving the city of His childhood, Nazareth, and moving to Capernaum. This was in fulfillment of what was spoken by the prophet Isaiah when he said, “The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, by the way of the sea, beyond the Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles: the people who sat in darkness have seen a great light, and upon those who sat in the region and shadow of death light has dawned.”

The Bible tells us that from this town Jesus began His public work among the people. The message that He preached was this one, “Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.”

Oral Questions

1. Describe the man called John the Baptist.
2. What was the message of John the Baptist?
3. What would John the Baptist do with those who confessed their sins?
4. Why did John the Baptist not want to baptize Jesus?
5. How was Jesus baptized?
6. What happened when Jesus came up from the water?
7. Why did Jesus go to the desert?
8. What did Jesus do for forty days and forty nights?
9. What was one of Satan’s temptations?
10. After the temptations, who came to serve Jesus?
11. Where did Jesus go after learning about the imprisonment of John the Baptist?
12. What was the message of Jesus? Who preached this same message?

Spiritual Truths-Lesson 2

Matthew 3-4

1. The message of John the Baptist and of Jesus was the same. “Repent for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.”
 - **To repent means to turn from the sin in your life. It means to give the complete control of your life to Jesus Christ.**
 - **Sin is disobeying God and His law.**
 - Is repenting a very difficult thing for a person to do? What does this word mean to you? *Discuss this concept among all group members; let each person have an opportunity to voice his/her opinion.*
2. The religious leaders thought that they did not need to repent of their sins because of their religion. They thought that they were good enough. John called these people sons of serpents. Is there anyone in the world who is religious enough or even good enough that they do not need to repent of their sins?

***The Bible says in Romans 3:23 that “All have sinned and have fallen short of the glory of God.”**

****Is there anyone in the world who does not have sin in their life? Is there anyone who has never disobeyed or defied God’s standard of behavior or attitude? The Bible says ‘No’. Do you agree with the Bible that we all have sin in our life? Again, it is important to allow each person to have an opportunity to challenge God’s Words on this subject. As a leader, do not argue or let anyone else argue, but it is okay to let people voice their feelings.***

3. Jesus was baptized, but He being God never sinned.

This tells us that baptism is NOT a religious ritual that can take away the sins from a person’s life. If the purpose of baptism was to clean a person from sins, Jesus would not have been baptized because He, being God, has never sinned.

4. When Jesus raised from the waters the Holy Spirit descended upon him like a dove and God the Father spoke from heaven saying, “This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased.” Here we see the three persons of the Trinity. What are they?

God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit.

5. Jesus was taken out to the desert to be tempted by Satan. Satan is real. He is a spirit who is in the world; along with many of his spirit followers called demons, and can bring destruction to our lives by leading us to disobedience of God. Just as Jesus was tempted, Satan also tempts us. But the Bible teaches that we, unlike Christ, are also tempted by wickedness that already exists in our hearts to do things that displease God, or sin.
6. The prophet Isaiah prophesied that Jesus would live in the way of the sea and that He would be a light to the people who were in darkness, to those who were living in the shadow of death.

All of us, without Christ, are in darkness, but maybe you or someone you love is living in the shadow of death. Some find themselves there because of drugs, others through immoral relationships, and still others are victims of violence. This verse tells us that Jesus came to give light to those of us in darkness, and He can give freedom to those who are living in the shadow of death.

*In our prayer time today, let’s pray for those loved ones that are living in the shadow of death. May we find light and freedom in Jesus Christ.

THE GOOD NEWS OF JESUS

By
Christy A. Brawner

“The Miracles of Jesus”- Lesson 3 **Matthew 4-9**

“Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men.”- Matthew 4:19

Review

1. Who told Joseph about the coming of Jesus, and who told him that His name would be “Immanuel” or “God with us?” This teaches us that Jesus is _____ with us.
2. Who wanted to kill the little boy Jesus? Why? Jesus escaped because they fled to _____.
3. Who baptized Jesus? The fact that Jesus was to be baptized tells us that the function of baptism is not the cleaning of _____ in our lives.
4. When Jesus came out of the water, something like a dove came down from heaven, and a voice also spoke from heaven? Who was the dove and whose voice came from heaven?
5. The Pharisees thought that they didn’t need to repent of their sins because they were very religious. Is it possible for someone to be religious enough to eliminate his or her sins?
6. What does the word “repent” mean?
7. What is sin?
8. Who tempted Jesus in the desert?
9. Where did Jesus go after He left the desert?

While He was going along the Sea of Galilee, Jesus came upon two fishermen. He called them and said, “Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.” They immediately left their nets and followed Him. On

that day, Jesus called his first four disciples: Peter, Andrew, James, and John. All of them were fishermen.

Then Jesus went through all the province of Galilee teaching in the synagogues, preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and curing all kinds of sickness and disease among the people. A large multitude followed Him wherever He went.

A leper came to Jesus and proceeded to worship Him. He called to Jesus and said, “Lord if you are willing, You can make me clean.” Jesus responded, “I am willing, be cleansed.” Immediately the leper was cleansed.

A captain of the Roman army came to Jesus. This man came to ask Him to cure his servant who was paralyzed and tormented. He believed in Jesus’ power to cure him. Jesus told him that many people of all nationalities would come eat together in the kingdom of heaven, and the servant was cured that same hour.

Another time, on the other side of the sea, there were two men possessed by demons. These men were so strong and ferocious that no one could hold them down or even walk by where they were. They lived among the tombs.

When they saw Jesus, the demons yelled out, “What have we to do with You, Jesus, You Son of God? Have You come here to torment us before the time?”

A pretty good way from where they were was a herd of pigs. The demons begged Jesus, “If You cast us out, permit us to go away into the herd of swine.” Jesus said to them, “Go.” The demons were immediately expelled from the men and entered into the pigs. The pigs in turn became possessed and crazed. They violently ran down the steep cliff crashing into the sea below. All the pigs drowned.

The owners of the pigs ran and told all the inhabitants of this particular city what Jesus had done, including what had happened to the demon-possessed men. The townspeople came out and asked Jesus to leave this region.

He left by boat, returning to His own city. Soon after this, He met a man named Matthew. Matthew worked for the government as a tax collector. Jesus said to him, “Follow Me.” Matthew got up immediately and followed Him.

So Jesus and His followers went to eat dinner that night with the tax collectors and other people of bad reputation of the town. When the religious leaders, the Pharisees, saw this, they asked Jesus' disciples, "Why does your Teacher eat with tax collectors and sinners?"

When Jesus heard this comment, He answered the Pharisees, "Those who are well have no need of a physician, but those who are sick. But go and learn what this means: 'I desire mercy, and not sacrifice.'" For I did not come to call the righteous, but sinners, to repentance."

Oral Questions

1. What was the profession of the first disciples of Jesus?
2. What did they do when Jesus called them to follow Him?
3. Jesus was going into every part of Galilee and multitudes were following Him. What was He doing to call such attention to Himself?
4. What was the first healing recorded in the book of Matthew?
5. What was the Roman officer's servant's problem?
6. Where did the demon-possessed men live? What kind of men were these?
7. What did the demons do when they saw Jesus?
8. What happened to the demons when they left the men?
9. What happened to the pigs?
10. What was the reaction of the owners of the pigs?
11. What kind of man was Matthew?
12. Jesus ate dinner with what kind of people?
13. What did the Pharisees think of this?
14. What kind of answer did Jesus give to the Pharisees?

Spiritual Truths- Lesson 3

Matthew 4-9

1. Jesus does not make any distinction between people.
 - Jesus' first disciples were fishermen, simple men without formal education.
 - The leper was a person who had been excluded from society because of a skin disease that left him disfigured and despised.
 - The Roman soldier's servant was a crippled person who had no money or position in society.
 - Matthew was a tax collector. Probably very rich, but a corrupt thief.
 - The demon possessed men were so despised by their countrymen that the townspeople preferred healthy pigs to these men being healed. They had actually lived among the tombs.

***But all these people were important and valuable to Jesus. You are a person of worth and value in the eyes of God. Your past, your finances, your appearance or your place in society do not mean anything to God.**

2. Jesus has power to cure our diseases. What are the examples in the story of people being cured?
3. Jesus has power over every spirit or demon. There are people who have become involved with demons or spirits, many times because they are trying to do things that are good. But before they know what has happened to them, these demons have taken over their lives. They are followed and tortured by these demons that never leave them alone. These people have no power to get rid of these demons from their lives. **Jesus has authority and power over EVERY demon and spirit in the world. We can have freedom from evil spirits ONLY through Jesus Christ.**
4. Jesus loves people of bad reputation. He accepts all sinners. Jesus

does not condemn people, but His desire is to bring every person to repentance and true forgiveness.

5. The religious people, or Pharisees, did not repent of their sins, and thought they were better than the other sinners who were eating with Jesus. What is better: to be a big sinner who has been forgiven, or a person with few sins but who refuses to repent?
 - It is far better to be a big sinner who has been forgiven.

Jesus accepts us and loves us just the way we are. It does not matter to Him if we are terrible sinners, if we are poor, if we have little education, if we have lots of problems or if we have physical illnesses. In His Eyes, we are all the same. The important thing is for us to repent and follow Him.

THE GOOD NEWS OF JESUS

By
Christy A. Brawner

“The Teachings of Jesus”- Lesson 4 **Matthew 10-16**

“I desire mercy, and not sacrifice.” Matthew 12:7

Review

1. Jesus was born of a Jewish woman named _____.
2. Wise men from the Orient were able to find Jesus because they were following a _____.
3. The wise men did not return to Herod’s palace because they were warned by God in a _____ to return home another way.
4. John the Baptist lived in the desert preaching and _____ those people who confessed their sins.
5. What does the word “repent,” mean?
6. When Jesus was baptized, the _____ descended to earth like a dove, and a voice from heaven spoke. This demonstrates for us the three persons of God: God the _____, God the _____, and God the _____. We call this the Trinity.
7. In the desert, Jesus was tempted by _____.
8. The first disciples of Jesus were _____ by profession.
9. Jesus encountered two men who were possessed with demons. How did Jesus help these men? How did the townspeople react to Jesus’ action?
10. The Pharisees criticized Jesus because He ate with what kind of people?
11. Is it better to be a big sinner who has repented, or a person with few sins but an unrepentant heart?

Jesus called twelve men to be His disciples, meaning to be close to Him and be trained by Him. He gave these twelve men power over evil spirits, and He gave them power to cure all kinds of diseases. He told them that they must give freely, for freely they had received. And Judas Iscariot was among these men who were sent out.

Jesus sent them to every corner of the country of Israel in order to call the Jewish people to repentance and faith in Jesus Christ. Jesus gave these men a message, “Whoever confesses Me before men, him I will also confess before My Father who is in heaven. But whoever denies Me before men, him I will also deny before My Father who is in heaven.”

And Jesus Himself went all over Galilee teaching, preaching and healing all kinds of diseases. But the people of Galilee, those with whom He had spent so much of His time rejected His message. The city of Capernaum, where He had begun His public ministry rejected Him. And in seeing this, Jesus went to speak to His Father, and these were His words:

“I thank you Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that You have hidden these things from the wise and prudent and have revealed them to babes. Even so, Father, for so it seemed good in Your sight. All things have been delivered to me by My Father, and no one knows the Son except the Father. Nor does anyone know the Father, except the Son, and the one to whom the Son wills to reveal Him. Come to Me, all you who labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and lowly in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. For My yoke is easy and My burden is light.”

After saying these things, Jesus with His disciples went past some wheat fields, and this was on a Sabbath. His disciples were hungry, so they stopped, pick some wheat and ate.

The Pharisees, remember these were the religious leaders, saw this and accused them because it is against the Jewish law to work on the Sabbath. Jesus answered them saying that they still did not understand the law of God because the Scriptures say, “I desire mercy, and not sacrifice.”

From the wheat fields, Jesus and the disciples went to the Jewish synagogue, and there they met a man with a withered hand. Jesus asked that man to stretch out his hand, and He cured him there in the synagogue in plain view on the Sabbath.

The Pharisees, outraged, left that place and formed a council in order to plot against Jesus to kill Him. Jesus, knowing what they were planning, also left that place. But a multitude followed Him, so He cured all of them asking them to keep from turning Him in.

And Jesus continued working in this region for a while longer teaching the people and healing their diseases. Twice the people followed Him out into the wilderness staying there long stretches of time listening to His words without even eating. Twice, Jesus took less than seven loaves of bread and a few fish and fed over four thousand people.

While still working in Galilee, Jesus explained clearly to His followers that He would soon be going to Jerusalem, and horrible things would happen there. He told them that He would have to suffer many things in the hands of the Jewish leaders, that He would be killed, but that three days later He would rise again unto life.

Oral Questions

1. What was the assignment that Jesus gave His disciples?
2. What did Jesus say He would do for those people who confessed Him before men, and what about those who denied Him before men?
3. How did the inhabitants of Capernaum, as well as many other cities in Galilee where He had performed most of His miracles, react to Jesus' message?
4. Jesus said for all those who are weary and heavy-laden to come to Him. What does He promise to do for these people?
5. Why did Jesus and His disciples stop in the wheat fields?
6. Why were the Pharisees critical of Jesus for gathering wheat?
7. Why were the Pharisees against Jesus healing the man with the withered hand?
8. What was the purpose of the council created by the Jewish leaders?
9. Jesus told His followers that certain things were going to happen to Him. What was His prophecy?

Spiritual Truths- Lesson 4

Matthew 10-16

1. Those who confess the name of Jesus before men, He will confess before His father. But those who deny Him before men, He will also deny before His father in Heaven.
 2. Many followed Jesus only because they wanted some miracle from Him, but they did not want a relationship with Him, they did not want to obey His words. They did not want to repent of their sins. They only wanted to take advantage of God's mercy. Today there are still many people like this? Do you know any?
 3. The only person who has access to the Father is Jesus Christ and those who come to the Father through Jesus Christ. There is no other intercessor to God except Jesus Christ. There is only one God, and there is only way to reach God, and the Bible teaches that that way is Jesus Christ.
- *Maybe you have been taught to pray to God through other intercessors besides Jesus Christ. Who are these other intercessors: are they gods, prophets, good people of the past? The Bible says they may have been good people, but they are not God. Do you agree with the Bible that there is only ONE intercessor between God and man, Jesus Christ?
4. Jesus wants to carry our burdens and our worries. He is gentle and lowly in heart. He wants to relieve us of the weights that we carry. In Him we can find rest for our souls if we accept His yoke, in other words if we accept His Lordship or leadership in our lives.
 5. Jesus is concerned about our physical needs. The disciples were hungry, and Jesus provided food for them, knowing that this would provoke anger and persecution from the Pharisees. The Creator God of the

Universe is worried about the physical needs of each of us.

“I desire mercy, not sacrifice.” What does the word “sacrifice” mean to you? Have you been taught by religious leaders to make sacrifices to God, maybe to receive favor or forgiveness of a sin? Is it difficult for you to believe that God does not want you to prove anything to Him by sacrifices? This is the second time that Jesus tried to explain to the Pharisees that God is not pleased with our human sacrifices. But for people who are very religious this is often a difficult fact to accept. All religions teach that we must do something in order to avoid the wrath of God or gain the favor of God. Many people go through many hardships trying to pay God back for promises they’ve made, pay for past sins, or simply to show loyalty to God. But this proves NOTHING to God. He wants a relationship with us. He wants to show us mercy; He does not want our sacrifices. Jesus knew that He would have to suffer many things and then die. But that after three days He would resurrect from the dead. This was all a part of God’s plan. He tried to explain this to His disciples, but they could not understand why He must die and then resurrect.

*In the last three lessons of this study, we are going to try to understand the significance of Jesus’ death and resurrection. This unique event would change the history of the world forever. This single event has the power to break the bondage of sin and transform our lives.

THE GOOD NEWS OF JESUS

By:
Christy A. Brawner

“The Betrayal of Jesus”- Lesson 5 **Matthew 20-26**

“Now Jesus, going up to Jerusalem, took the twelve disciples aside on the road and said to them, ‘Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and the Son of Man will be betrayed to the chief priests and to the scribes; and they will condemn Him to death, and deliver Him to the Gentiles to mock and to scourge and to crucify. And the third day He will rise again.’” Matthew 20:17-19

Review

1. Jesus was born of a virgin named _____.
2. His earthly father, _____, had a dream in which God told him to flee to Egypt because King Herod wanted to _____ Jesus.
3. John the Baptist lived in the desert preaching and baptizing all that _____ of their sins.
4. Jesus didn’t have any _____, but He asked John the Baptist to baptize Him.
5. What does the word “repent” mean?
6. When Jesus was baptized, the _____ descended like a dove and the voice of God was heard saying, “This is my _____ in whom I am well pleased.”
7. In the desert Jesus was tempted by _____.
8. Jesus encountered two men that were possessed of _____.
9. Jesus demonstrated that He has power to _____ demons.
10. Which is better, to be a great sinner with many sins but repentant or to be a person with few sins and to never repent?

PIONEER EVANGELISM

11. Jesus said that if you confess Him before men, He will _____ you before His _____ in heaven.
12. Many Galileans, including the people of the city of Capernaum, _____ the Word of God; they only followed Jesus because of the many miracles He performed.
13. They didn't want to repent of their sins. Again, what does the word "repent," mean?
14. Jesus said that He would give _____ to all who were weary and heavy laden for His yoke is _____.
15. The Pharisees didn't want Jesus to cure the man with the withered hand because it was on the _____ day, and it is against the law to work on the _____.
16. The Pharisees devised a plan to _____ Jesus.
17. Jesus knew that the Pharisees were planning His death, but He still continued to do many miracles including multiplying two _____ and some _____ to feed more than four thousand people.

Jesus with His disciples made the journey from Galilee to Jerusalem. As He was about to arrive in Jerusalem, Jesus asked two of his disciples to pass by a certain village and retrieve a donkey and a colt that He needed. Jesus sat on this colt for the trip into the city of Jerusalem.

He entered gloriously and triumphantly. A multitude gathered around Him on each side of the street. A large number of people lay their own clothes on the road to make a type of carpet for Jesus to enter into the city. Some broke palm branches and spread them all over the road as a means of honoring Him. And still others would walk before and behind Him yelling, "Hosanna to the Son of David! Blessed is He who comes in the name of the LORD!" Hosanna in the highest!"

The entire city of Jerusalem was moved by this grand and unusual event. Everyone in town was asking, "Who is this?" So the many people answered, "This is Jesus, the prophet from Nazareth of Galilee."

So Jesus entered the city and went to the Jewish temple. There he kicked out all of the venders; He overturned the tables of the moneychangers who had set up booths in the temple. He said to them, "It is written, My house shall be called a house of prayer, but you have made it a den of

thieves.” After this He stayed in the temple healing the blind and the lame.

After Jesus had taught the people many things, performed many signs and wonders in the temple, the chief priests and the religious leaders joined together in order to plot His death. They discussed how somehow by trickery they might kill Him. They were, however, anxious about executing such a plot during the Passover, so it was decided by them to wait until the Passover was over to deal with Jesus.

Now one of the twelve disciples, the one named Judas Iscariot, went to meet the chief priests saying, “What are you willing to give me if I deliver Him to you?” They agreed and gave him thirty silver coins. And it was from this day forth that Judas began to look for an opportunity where he might betray Jesus.

As it was the week of Passover, the disciples prepared the dinner for the feast according to specific instructions given by Jesus. On the night of the celebration, Jesus sat down together with the twelve and said to them, “Assuredly I say to you, one of you will betray Me.” As He said this, the disciples became very sad and each of them began asking, “Lord, is it I?”

Jesus answered them saying; “He who dipped his hand with Me in the dish will betray Me. The Son of Man indeed goes just as it is written of Him, but woe to that man by whom the Son of Man is betrayed! It would have been good for that man if he had not been born.”

Judas, the one who was betraying Him, asked, “Rabbi, is it I?” And Jesus answered Him; “You have said it.”

So they ate dinner together that evening, and while they were still eating, Jesus took bread, blessed and broke it saying, “Take, eat; this is My body.” Then He took the cup, gave thanks and gave it to them, saying, “Drink from it, all of you. For this is My blood of the new covenant, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.”

After they had finished the meal, they sang a hymn, and together they went to the hill called Mount of Olives. There Jesus continued to teach them many things some of which was concerning the events that soon were to take place.

Then Jesus brought them down to a place called Gethsemane where they were to pray with Him all night long. Now Jesus took Peter, James

and John together with Him as He began to become deeply distressed. He asked them to please sit up with Him. He then left them and went a little farther away to pray to His Father alone. He prayed this night regarding the things that were about to unfold. His Words have been recorded as follows:

“O My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from Me; nevertheless, not as I will, but as You will.”

It is recorded that He prayed this same prayer three times, and His heart was sorrowful even to death.

The disciples, however, could not even keep their eyes open for a single hour. They all fell asleep. Finally, Jesus woke them all up saying, “Rise, let us be going. See, My betrayer is at hand.”

Oral Questions

1. On what kind of animal did Jesus enter Jerusalem?
2. How did the people treat Jesus as He was entering into the city?
3. What did Judas do to betray Jesus?
4. What festival was being celebrated in the city?
5. How did Jesus warn Judas that He knew He would betray Him?
6. What did Jesus say about the wine at the supper?
7. According to Jesus, for what is the shedding of blood necessary?
8. Jesus took His disciples to Gethsemane to spend the night in prayer. How many of His disciples were able to stay up all night praying?
9. What was the prayer that Jesus prayed the night of His betrayal?

Spiritual Truths- Lesson 5

Matthew 20-26

1. God is in control of all things. The Pharisees were conspiring to catch Jesus by surprise. But God, the entire time, was using them to exercise His perfect will on earth. It always was the will of God that Jesus would die on the cross.
2. God knows what is in our hearts when others don't know. Jesus knew the entire time that His disciple, Judas, was going to betray Him.
3. Jesus loves us and treats us with the same love even if we reject Him. Judas was so well treated by Jesus that no other disciple could believe that he was the traitor. In the same way, Jesus loves us and treats us lovingly even though many times we betray and reject Him and His will for our lives.
4. The blood of Jesus was shed for us for the remission or forgiveness of our sins. The disciples, at this time, did not understand the fact that Jesus had to die. They did not understand that God demands of each person the payment of sins in his/her life and that this payment is the shedding of blood. They understood that Jesus loved them and that they were forgiven of their sins. But they would need more time until they understood the price that Jesus had to pay in order to be able to forgive their sins.

*Many people know that they have sin in their lives. Some people may even have heard the story of Jesus, and that He loves them. But very few understand that God demands blood as a payment for sin. Jesus, because He is God, is the only person who ever lived or will live on this earth without a single sin. Because of His incredible love for us, He chose to surrender His life as a sacrifice to pay the price for our sins and not just ours but for the sins of the whole world. It is because of this sacrifice, that we now have an opportunity to receive forgiveness for our sins and peace with God.

Next week, we will look at the details of the crucifixion of Christ.

THE GOOD NEWS OF JESUS

By
Christy A. Brawner

“The Crucifixion of Jesus”- Lesson 6 **Matthew 26-27**

“Jesus said to him, “It is as you said. Nevertheless, I say to you hereafter you will see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of the Power, and coming on the clouds of heaven.” Matthew 26:64

Review

1. Jesus was born of a virgin whose name was _____.
2. Just as the Scriptures had foretold, Jesus was born in the city of _____.
3. Just as the Scriptures had said, Jesus came out of the land of _____, because He was fleeing from King Herod.
4. Jesus’ earthly father, _____, had a dream advising him to return to Israel because King Herod had died. Joseph, still afraid of King Herod’s son, moved his family to the province of _____ to a city called Nazareth.
5. Jesus began his public ministry by being baptized by _____.
6. As Jesus came up out of the waters the _____ like a dove came down from heaven, also the voice of _____ spoke from the heavens saying, “This is My beloved Son in whom I am well pleased.”
7. Jesus cured many people and forgave many people of their _____.
8. Even after many miracles, many people from the region of Galilee _____ Jesus’ message, and did not want to repent of their sins.

9. What does the word “repent,” mean?
10. As Jesus went into the city of Jerusalem there was a great procession of people who accompanied Him. In the procession, Jesus was sitting on a _____.
11. On the night of the Passover celebration, Jesus told His disciples that one of them would _____ Him. At that time, nobody knew which one of them it was.
12. Jesus spoke of the wine that they were drinking. He said that it represented His blood that would be shed for the _____ of sins.
13. The disciples heard these words but still could not understand that Jesus was going to _____ for their sins.
14. After dinner, they all went to the Mount of Olives and then to Gethsemane. Jesus prayed during the night while the disciples _____.
15. Jesus prayed, “If it is possible let this cup pass from Me, nevertheless, not as I will, but as _____ will.

While Jesus was still waking up His disciples, Judas, the one who had betrayed Him, arrived with a large group of people including the chief priests and religious leaders many carrying swords and clubs. Judas came up to Jesus and kissed Him saying, “Greetings, Rabbi!” Jesus answered Him, “Friend, why have you come?”

Suddenly, one of Jesus’ disciples rashly pulled out a sword and cut off the ear of one of the chief priest’s servants. Jesus called the disciple’s attention and healed the man’s ear. He informed this disciple that if He so desired there were twelve legions of angels ready to do battle, but that all that was occurring was the will of the Father for the Scriptures to be fulfilled.

Jesus then turned to the gang of people that had arrived and asked them, “Have you come out, as against a robber, with swords and clubs to take Me? I sat daily with you, teaching in the temple, and you did not seize Me. But all this was done that the Scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled.”

And His disciples quickly fled from that place leaving Him alone.

So those who had seized Him took Him to the house of a man named

Caiaphas who was at the time the highest priest. For at His house awaited all the priests and religious leaders ready to interrogate Him.

They had arranged for many false witnesses to testify against Him in order to condemn Him to death. And surely many did come forward, but even still they could not gather sufficient evidence to put Him to death until the high priest Himself came to interrogate Him. He finally asked Jesus, "I put You under oath by the living God: Tell us if You are the Christ, the Son of God!"

Jesus said to Him, "It is as you said. Nevertheless, I say to you, hereafter you will see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of the Power, and coming on the clouds of heaven."

Hearing this answer, the chief priest ripped off his clothes saying, "Blasphemy!" The people that had gathered there then took Jesus and began to spit on His face. Some beat Him while others struck Him with the palms of their hands saying, "Prophecy to us, Christ! Who is the one who struck You?"

When morning finally came, the priests and religious leaders took Jesus to the Roman Governor of the region named Pontius Pilate. They told him that He claimed to be the King of the Jews.

Pilate took Him and interrogated Him asking Him, "Are You the King of the Jews?" Jesus answered, "It is as you say."

But even after all of his interrogation, Pilate could not find a reason to crucify Jesus. Also, his wife had had a disturbing dream about the whole thing the night before and warned her husband to have nothing to do with Jesus. Pilate knew that the Jewish leaders had only turned Jesus into him out of envy, but he did not know what to do for the people had become stirred up.

Now, every year at the time of the Passover, it had been Pilate's costume to release one prisoner of the people's choice. And this year, there was an especially notorious criminal in the jail called Barrabas. So, he got Barrabas and Jesus and made an offer to the people, "Whom do you want me to release to you? Barrabas, or Jesus who is called Christ?" But the people, who had been riled up by the Pharisees yelled out, "Barrabas!"

"What then shall I do with Jesus who is called Christ?" asked Pilate. And the people cried out, "Let Him be crucified."

So Pilate, seeing that the people were beginning to riot got a basin of water and washed his hands saying, "I am innocent of the blood of this just Person, you see to it." He released Barrabas to the people and sent Jesus to be whipped.

Pilate's soldiers took Jesus to Pilate's headquarters, the Praetorian and there they tortured and mocked Him. They gathered all around Him, stripped Him and dressed Him in a scarlet robe. Then they twisted a crown of thorns and put it into His head. They gave Him a reed to hold in His hand as if it were a scepter, and they kneeled before Him sarcastically saying, "Hail, King of the Jews!" They spat on Him; they then took the reed that had been in His hand and hit Him on the head with it. After they had finished making fun of Him, they took the robe off, put His clothes back on Him and led Him away to the place called Golgotha, or the "Place of a Skull" for this was the place where He was to be crucified.

Jesus was crucified there, and on the cross the Romans put a plaque over His head reading, "This is Jesus the King of the Jews." Jesus was crucified between two thieves, one on either side of Him.

Now from the sixth hour to the ninth hour, while Jesus was hanging on the cross, a great darkness covered all the land. And about the ninth hour, Jesus cried out saying, "Eli Eli, lama sabachthani?" This means, "My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me?" A little later He yelled again. It was with this yell that He surrendered His Spirit.

At the time that He surrendered His Spirit, many bizarre things occurred simultaneously. The veil of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom; the earth quaked, many rocks split, and many graves were opened, so that many bodies of saints who had fallen asleep were raised; These, after His resurrection, came out of their graves, went into Jerusalem, and were seen by many people.

Oral Questions

1. How was Jesus betrayed?
2. One of Jesus' disciples did something in an attempt to defend Jesus. What was it and what was Jesus' reaction?
3. At the time of His betrayal what did all of His disciples do?
4. Where did the men from the garden take Jesus?

5. Even though there were many false witnesses, how did they eventually convict Jesus of blasphemy?
6. Where did the Jewish leaders take Jesus as soon as morning broke?
7. Pilate, after his interrogation, did not find Jesus guilty but was afraid of the people, so he gave the people a choice. What was the offer he made the people, and what was the people's choice?
8. How did the soldiers treat Jesus?
9. After three hours of darkness, Jesus yelled out to God. What is the translation of this yell?
10. What were some of the things that happened when Jesus surrendered His Spirit?

Spiritual Truths- Lesson 6

Matthew 26-27

1. Who is Jesus? “The Son of Man sitting at the right hand of the Power, and coming on the clouds of heaven.” This was the answer Jesus gave the chief priest, and it was this response that ultimately led to His crucifixion. It was an answer that those people could not accept. But, each person must also wrestle with this same question. Who really is Jesus? Because if Jesus really is sitting at the right hand of the Power and coming on the clouds of heaven, we each must decide how we will respond to Him?
2. Jesus was crucified in the place of Barrabas, a despised criminal; and Barrabas was in turn set free.

*Maybe I am not a despised criminal, but just like Barrabas, I am a sinner and before God I too have earned a death penalty. The Bible says in Romans 6:23, “The wages of sin is death.” This means that we all deserve to die because of the bad things that we have done in our lives. It does not matter if we have many sins as in the case of Barrabas, or if we have been a relatively good person as some of His disciples had been.

3. Jesus was tortured, judged and killed to pay the penalty for the sins in our lives. This was the reason Jesus came to earth. He wanted us to be able to stand before God forgiven of our sins. Some people have said that Jesus was a martyr or a prophet. But this is not true according to Jesus’ own confession. He claimed to be God and to have come to earth to die for our sins.
4. Jesus surrendered His Spirit. At any moment Jesus could have descended from the cross. He could have killed all of the people who made fun of Him with a single word. But, by His own choosing, He endured the humiliation and stayed on the cross until the chosen hour. Then in His time, He surrendered His Spirit. He chose to die because He wanted to pay the debt for our sins. The Bible says in John 3:16

that, “God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believes on Him will not perish but have everlasting life.”

*In the next lesson, we will study the resurrection of Jesus. For the truth is that Jesus is not dead, but is alive and today wants to come into your life. He wants to purify your heart from all your sins, and transform your life completely.

THE GOOD NEWS OF JESUS

By
Christy A. Brawner

“The Resurrection of Jesus”- Lesson 7 **Matthew 27-28**

“Do not be afraid, for I know that you seek Jesus who was crucified. He is not here; for He is risen, as He said.” Matthew 28:5-6

Review

1. Jesus was born of a virgin girl named _____.
2. Jesus began His public ministry by being _____ by a man named John the Baptist.
3. At His baptism, the _____ descended upon Jesus like a dove, and the voice of God spoke from the heavens saying, “This is my beloved _____ in whom I am well pleased.” This shows us the three persons of the Trinity: God the _____, God the _____ and God the _____.
4. Jesus cured many people of diseases and forgave many people of their _____.
5. But even after many miracles, many people who lived in Galilee rejected His words and did not want to _____ of their sins.
6. What does the word “repent,” mean?
7. Jesus said that the wine represented His blood that would be _____ for many for the _____ of sins.
8. Pharisees seized Jesus in the garden where He had been praying, and took Him to the house of the High _____ whose name was Caiphas.
9. The high priest asked Jesus if He were _____ and Jesus answered that He was. At this time people came up to Jesus and _____

- in His face, _____ Him, and struck Him with the _____ of their hands.
10. When morning came, the Pharisees took Jesus to the Roman Governor whose name was _____.
 11. Pilate did not find Jesus to be guilty, but allowed Him to be crucified because he feared a _____ among the people.
 12. The Roman soldiers tortured Jesus. They put a crown of _____ upon His head and hit His head with a _____, which they had given Him to hold.
 13. On the cross where Jesus was hung, there was a plague saying, “THIS IS JESUS, THE _____ OF THE JEWS.”
 14. From the sixth hour to the ninth hour, there was _____ on the earth.

There was a very rich man named Joseph of Arimathea who also was a disciple of Jesus. This man asked Pilate if he could be allowed to take Jesus' body and lay Him in his own tomb. Pilate agreed to this request, and Jesus was laid in a new tomb. After laying Jesus in the cave, a great rock was rolled against the door of the tomb.

The next day, the Pharisees met together and went before Pilate because they remembered the words of Jesus when He said that He would rise again on the third day. They asked Pilate if He would make the tomb secure until the third day in case something should happen to the body. So, Pilate gave them permission to make it as secure as they knew how. They went to the place, put guards in front of the tomb and sealed the stone.

On the first day of the week, Mary Magdalene and the other Mary went to the tomb where Jesus was laying. When they got there, there was an earthquake, the rock that had been used to seal the tomb was moved, and an angel of the Lord was sitting on the stone. The guards that had been protecting the tomb shook for fear and had become like dead men.

But the angel spoke to the ladies and he said, “Do not be afraid, for I know that you seek Jesus who was crucified. He is not here; for He is risen, as He said. Come see the place where the Lord lay. And go quickly and tell His disciples that He is risen from the dead, and indeed He is going

before you into Galilee; there you will see Him. Behold, I have told you.”

The women ran out of the tomb with fear and great joy hurrying to tell the disciples what had happened. But as they went to find the disciples, Jesus met them saying, “Rejoice!” They stopped, held Him by the feet and worshipped Him. He told them to tell the disciples to meet Him in Galilee.

Now the soldiers who had been guarding the tomb entered into the city and told the high priests what had happened at the tomb. The high priests consulted each other and decided to give the soldiers a large sum of money for the soldiers to spread news around town that the disciples had stolen the body while they had fallen asleep on the site. They further promised the guards that if word got to Pilate that the soldiers had gone to sleep then they themselves would personally defend the soldiers before the governor. So the soldiers took the bribe, and spread many rumors that circulated around the city for several years.

The eleven remaining disciples went to Galilee to the mountain where Jesus had told them to meet Him. When they saw Him, they all worshiped Him, but some doubted.

So Jesus spoke to them for the last time saying, “All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth. Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all things that I have commanded you; and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age.” Amen.

Oral Questions

1. What did Joseph of Arimathea ask of Pilate?
2. The Pharisees were afraid that something would happen to Jesus’ body on the third day. Why?
3. Who went to see Jesus on the first day, and what did these ladies find when they arrived at the tomb?
4. While returning to tell the disciples what they had discovered, they ran into whom?
5. Jesus told his disciples to meet them at another place besides Jerusalem. Where?

6. On the mountain, Jesus had a very important command to give His disciples. Try to fill in the blanks with Jesus' words: Go, therefore and make _____ of all nations, _____ them in the name of the Father, the Son and the _____, teaching them to observe all things that I have commanded you, and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age."

Spiritual Truths- Lesson 7

Matthew 27-28

1. Jesus is alive today. Jesus is not a human being who can be imprisoned and killed. He is God eternal. He is without beginning and without end. God's plan from the beginning of the world was to come to earth in the form of a man as a suffering servant. It was His will to be crucified on that day and in that way. His plans cannot be frustrated, nor can anyone ever prevail over Him. He is still and always will be God, the only true living God.

2. The Pharisees believed the words of Jesus to the point that they had soldiers guarding His tomb after His death because He had promised to raise again. They believed the words of the soldiers when they told them what had happened. They even paid the soldiers to lie about this event. These same leaders had been present when John the Baptist baptized Jesus, and God's very own voice spoke from heaven confirming who He was. These men were witnesses to many of the miracles that He performed. They were even angry with Him when He cured the man with the withered hand on the Sabbath. They had seen Him expel many demons from tormented people, and they had watched Him forgive people of their sins. Almost no one knew more about the life and message of Jesus than did the Pharisees. But this same group of people did not accept the love of God that He offered in their own lives. They did not repent of their sins. They did not surrender the control of their lives to the authority of Jesus Christ. To have a relationship with Jesus Christ is more than learning and believing the facts of His life. It is more than a new and different religion. Jesus desires for us to repent of our sins, believe in Him, and give Him our lives. He wants to become the Lord or leader of our lives. He wants to control us every single day of our life.

3. Who is Jesus?
 - Jesus was born of a virgin.
 - Jesus claimed He was God.

- Jesus performed many miracles and forgave the people who repented of their sins.
- Jesus died on the cross to pay the price for the sins in our lives before a just God.
- Jesus resurrected from the dead and is alive today.
- Jesus wants for me also to repent of my sins and give my life to Him.

The Bible teaches us that Jesus did not die to become an example, He died to be a replacement for you and me who deserve to face God for all the things that we have done wrong in our lives.

The Bible says that “All who call upon the name of the Lord will be saved.” Romans 10:13

- ❖ This means that regardless of my past, I can ask Jesus to come into my life and He will forgive me of all my sins and live in my life.
- ❖ It means that from the moment that Jesus enters into my heart, all of my past sins, present sins, and future sins, are **ALREADY** forgiven before God. This is not because of anything that I have done. It is not because I have chosen a good religion. It is not because I have become a moral person. It is not because my parents are from a specific ethnic group or social class. It is **ONLY** because I have accepted the sacrifice that Jesus already paid when He died on the cross.
- ❖ It means that from this moment on, I am a pure person again in the Eyes of God, innocent. The Bible teaches that the wages of sin are death, but the death of Christ is enough to make me a new creature. If I make the choice to follow Him.

If you would like the forgiveness of God right now in your life, and would like to become a follower of Christ, you may ask Him to come into your heart right this moment. It is not necessary to be in any particular religious place, it is not necessary to say any special or magic words. It is only important that you come before God and declare that you believe that Jesus is God and want Him to be the Lord or controller of your life.

You may pray something like this:

“Father, I know that I am a sinner. I believe that Jesus died on the cross and arose from the grave to save me from my sins. I repent of my sins. Come into my life and forgive me of all my sins. I give you my life. Thank you for your love for me. In Jesus’ name. Amen”

4. “And lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age.”

The Bible says in John 14:2, “In My Father’s house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go to prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself; that where I am, there you may be also.”

Jesus promised us that EVERYONE who gives his or her life to Him will spend eternity with Him in a place called heaven. Heaven is the home of the Father. Once we have accepted Jesus into our lives, we will spend eternity with Jesus. This means that Jesus will be with us here on earth, but when we die we will spend eternity with Him in heaven.

The love that Jesus has for us truly lasts forever!

BEGINNING A NEW LIFE IN CHRIST

BASED ON THE GOSPEL OF MATTHEW

The Story of the Life of Jesus Christ

By

Christy A. Brawner

Pioneer Evangelism Series

BEGINNING A NEW LIFE IN CHRIST

By
Christy A. Brawner

*If it is possible, let each member of the group who can write bring a blank notebook and a pen to this study.

“The First and Second Coming of Jesus”-Lesson 1 **Matthew 1 and 24**

“Watch therefore, for you do not know what hour your Lord is coming...Therefore you also be ready, for the Son of Man is coming at an hour you do not expect.” Matthew 24:42, 44

At the time when the Romans ruled the known world there was a young virgin girl, in the country of Israel named Mary who was engaged to a man named Joseph. Now, Mary became pregnant before they were married, and when Joseph found out he wanted to end their engagement. So, one night he decided to do this, but to do it secretly so as not to cause public shame for Mary.

While he was thinking through all these things, an angel of the Lord came to him. The angel told him to go ahead and marry Mary for she had not cheated on him, but had conceived supernaturally by the Holy Spirit. The angel told him that she was to bear the child that had been promised by the old Jewish prophets. The child she was to bear was the one referred to by the prophet Isaiah when he said, “the virgin shall be with child, and bear a Son, and they shall call His name Immanuel, which is translated, ‘God with us’.”

So Joseph believed the angel, and took Mary to be his wife. However they did not have any sexual relations until after the birth of the Jesus thus He was born of a virgin. Joseph named the child, Jesus.

The Bible made many prophecies about the coming of Jesus. His birth was predicted in the Old Testament as well as the events leading up to His death and resurrection. Jesus, Himself, made many promises concerning who He was and what He will do. Some of Jesus' prophecies as well as others from the Old Testament have not yet been fulfilled. These prophecies tell us that Jesus will come again to earth. The first coming of Christ was in a humble place because He came as a Suffering Servant. But the Bible teaches us that His Second Coming will be very different.

Jesus spoke to His followers of His return while He taught them at the place called the Mount of Olives. He told them these things in response to the question, "And what will be the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the age?"

Jesus answered them first with a caution: He told them to take great care so that no one would be deceived. He explained that as His coming gets closer more and more people will come using His name. They will say, "I am the Christ." Unfortunately, lots of people will believe these false prophets. And at this time also, there will be many wars among the different peoples of the earth. There will be four horrible calamities: unrest and rumors of wars, famines, diseases and earthquakes. But these things are just the beginning. For there will be even more sorrows that will come before the end of time.

For people will betray each other; they will kill each other; and they will hate each other because of their belief in Jesus. There will be many false prophets that go around deceiving people. Lawlessness will grow, and the love that people once had for each other will grow cold. But through all these things, the Good News of Christ will continue to be shared until all the nations have heard of Christ, and then the end will come.

There will be great tribulation, or trouble, all over the world. And if God let man just continue as he would like, we would very soon self destruct completely, but for the sake of the followers of Christ, God will shorten the days of trouble and suffering on the earth.

So do not believe the false prophets and the false Christs who will go from place to place performing many impressive signs and wonders.

These people are only trying to deceive people; even possibly those who have given their lives to Jesus Christ.

But then, one day, as lightening comes from the east and flashes to the west, so also will be the coming of the Son of Man. After the tribulation, the sun will be darkened, the moon will not give its light, the stars will fall out of the sky, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken. THEN the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and THEN all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And He will send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together all the people who have given their lives to Jesus Christ. And these shall gather from the four winds, from one end of the heaven to the other.

But exactly when this will occur, no one knows. The angels in heaven do not even know when Jesus will come back to earth. No one knows when Jesus Christ will return to earth except the Father.

“Therefore, you also be ready, for the Son of Man is coming at an hour you do not expect.”

Oral Questions

1. In what country was Jesus born?
2. What were the names of Jesus' earthly parents?
3. What was miraculous about Jesus' first coming to earth?
4. The prophet Isaiah prophesied that Jesus would be born of a virgin and be called Immanuel, which means “_____.”
5. When Jesus was with His disciples on the Mount of Olives, what was the question they asked Him?
6. Jesus told them to be careful so that they are not deceived by what kind of people?
7. He said many people will come claiming to be who?
8. Jesus mentioned four kinds of horrible things that will occur all over the world before he comes. What are these things? W_____, F_____, D_____, and E_____.
9. Jesus said that His followers will suffer because they believe in Christ. What are some of the things Jesus said people would do to each other?

10. Jesus said the false prophets would have powers to do what kinds of things that even followers of Jesus might be fooled?
11. Jesus said His coming would be like what event in nature?
12. What is going to happen to the sun, the moon, and the stars when Jesus comes again?
13. What instrument are the angels going to play as they gather up the followers of Christ?
14. Where will God's people unite?
15. Who is the only one who knows when Jesus Christ will come again?
16. How should I react, if someone does miracles that are not in Jesus' name or claims to be the Christ?

Spiritual Truths- Lesson 1

Matthew 1, 24

1. Just as Jesus came the first time in fulfillment of the prophecies, He will come again with power and great glory. There are many false religions, many false prophets, and many people who claim to be God. When Jesus comes again there will be no doubt as to who He is. The Bible says that every knee will bow and every tongue will confess that Jesus is Lord. Anyone who comes to us and claims to be a new prophet, a new Christ or a god is a false prophet and a phony.
2. He will gather up all His people from one end of heaven to the other.
 - ❖ Jesus promised to come, and He did. He promises to come again, and He will. He promises to gather up ALL of His followers, and He will.
 - ❖ When we ask Jesus to come into our lives, when we give our hearts to Him, He promises that He will never leave us or forsake us. This means that, no matter if we sin (and we all will) God is faithful to keep His promise to us. It doesn't matter what happens to us, or what we do, if we have given our lives to Jesus, He will take us with Him to heaven, and at the time of His return we will meet Him in the clouds.
3. God's people will suffer for following Him.

The Bible teaches that as the world comes to an end, people will become more and more wicked. They will hate more, kill more, and betray each other more. The Bible says that many people will hate those who follow Jesus and mistreat them. It might be that you have already experienced people treating you differently because you made a decision to follow Jesus. How have people's attitudes toward you changed since you asked Jesus to come into your heart? Have some people, maybe even close friends and family, betrayed your friendship because of your decision to follow Christ?

The Bible teaches that we must love these people (Matthew 5:43-48). We must love the very ones who hate us and hurt us. We must love them and pray for them. This is how Jesus treated those who hurt and betrayed Him, and to be a follower of Christ is to follow His example of love. The Bible also teaches that there is a special blessing reserved for those who suffer or who are persecuted for following Christ. In fact, the Bible tells us to count it all joy because it will one day be worth the price we paid.

- Let us end this meeting in prayer. Let's each one share our experience of what has happened to you since accepting Christ. Hopefully it is a beautiful story, but it may not be. Has anyone suffered from accepting Christ? Let us remember to pray for this person as a group.
- But before we pray, let each person who brought a notebook, or those who have a blank sheet of paper and pen, take it out. If you have a notebook, write the names of each member of the group on the top of a separate sheet of paper. Under each name, we will list the prayer requests of each person. Let us remember the prayer requests of each person. Let us also make a list of people we know who need to accept Christ. Share these lists with each other so that we may join our friends in the battle for our friends and loved ones.
- As we go out this week, let's agree to pray for each other every day. Put this notebook or piece of paper, in your bedroom, and before you go to bed or when you get up take it out and remember to pray for one another.
- Let us close this meeting thanking God for being faithful to keep His promises. Let's thank Him for coming to earth the first time to save us from our sins, and for the promise of His Second Coming. Let's ask him to help us to be faithful to pray for each other every day this coming week.

BEGINNING A NEW LIFE IN CHRIST

By
Christy A. Brawner

“Jesus’ Flight to Egypt and His Baptism”- Lesson 2 **Mathew 2-3**

“When He had been baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened to Him, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and alighting upon Him. And suddenly a voice came from heaven, saying, “This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.” Matthew 3:16-17

Review

1. The name of Jesus’ mother was _____.
2. The prophet Isaiah said that Jesus would be called Immanuel, which translates meaning “God _____.”
3. On the Mount of Olives when the disciples asked Jesus about His return to earth, Jesus said they must be careful so that they would not be deceived by _____.
4. Jesus said many will come claiming to be _____.
5. Jesus said that horrible things would happen all over the world such as W____, F_____, D_____ and E_____.
6. Jesus said that followers of Christ would suffer also, why?
7. Jesus said his coming would be like what event in nature?
8. Where will the angels unite the people of God?
9. Who is the only one who knows when Jesus Christ will come again?
10. How should I react if someone does miracles that are not in Jesus’ name or claim to be the Christ?
11. I should count myself _____ when someone makes fun of me because of Christ.
12. I should treat those who mistreat me because of Christ with _____.

Jesus was born in Bethlehem and lived there until the time when He was visited by certain wise men from the East. These men came to Israel following a bright star. Entering into the Jewish province of Judea, they had gone first to the capital city, Jerusalem. There they went to King Herod, and asked him where the new King of Israel had been born for they had seen His star.

Herod and all Jerusalem with him, were disturbed when they heard these things, so Herod called a secret meeting of all his religious advisers. He asked these scholars where the Scriptures had said the promised King of the Jews would be born. They told him that the prophecies stated that the Child was to be born in Bethlehem.

Herod told the wise men where to go. But before they left his palace, he asked them when exactly they had first seen the star. He did this so he could figure out the age of the child.

The wise men continued their journey to Bethlehem, and the star guided them to the very house where Jesus was living. The wise men entered that place and worshiped Him. They also presented him with very precious gifts: gold, frankincense and myrrh. Before they left to go back to their homeland, these men had a dream from God. In this dream, they were told not to return home by way of Jerusalem, as Herod had asked. They went home another way.

Joseph also had another dream from the Lord. This dream warned Him to leave immediately with Mary and the Child. They were to go to Egypt and stay there until he heard another word from the Lord. He was told that Herod was going to try to kill the child. This would be in fulfillment of the Old Testament prophecy; “Out of Egypt I called My Son.”

Herod did indeed set out to kill the promised Child. He put to death all the male children ages two and under who were in Bethlehem or in its surrounding areas.

After the death of Herod, Joseph had another dream advising Him to return to Israel. Joseph obeyed God. He went to a province north of Judea called Galilee, and they settled in the town of Nazareth.

Now in those days, there was a man named John the Baptist who came preaching in the wilderness of Judea. He preached the message, “Repent, for the kingdom of God is at hand.” John himself was clothed in

camel's hair with a leather belt around his waist. His food was grasshoppers and wild honey.

Jerusalem, all Judea, and the entire region around the Jordan River went out to him and were baptized in the Jordan, confessing their sins. But also many of the religious leaders, the Pharisees and Sadducees, would come out to hear him speak. These men John called, a "Brood of Vipers," because they trusted in their religious heritage and traditions to save them, not believing they must repent of their sins.

As John the Baptist preached, he spoke of One who was coming who would baptize with the Holy Spirit and fire. He said that this One was going to divide the people, gathering to Himself those who put their faith in Him and allowing the rest to burn with unquenchable fire.

So Jesus came from Galilee to John at the Jordan to be baptized by him. John tried to prevent it, for he felt that he was unworthy. But Jesus insisted on being baptized because He wanted all righteousness to be fulfilled.

When He had been baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water; and everyone could see that the sky was opening up to Him. The Holy Spirit then descended on Him like a dove and a voice came from heaven saying, "This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased."

Oral Questions

1. What kind of men came to visit Jesus and what did they give him?
2. In what city did these men first stop, and with whom did they speak?
3. Why did God warn Joseph to flee to Egypt?
4. Where did Joseph go after Herod's death?
5. Where did John the Baptist preach?
6. What did he look like?
7. What was his message for the people?
8. What happened to the people who confessed their sins?
9. Why did John the Baptist call the Pharisees and Sadducees a "Brood of Vipers?"
10. John preached of One coming who was greater than He. He said this One would divide the people of the world. How so?

11. Who came from Galilee to be baptized by John?
12. Jesus insisted that John baptize Him even though John felt unworthy.
What was the reason that Jesus gave?
13. What happened when Jesus came up from the water?

Spiritual Truths- Lesson 2

Matthew 2-3

1. We can only experience God's best for our lives when we obey Him completely. God told Joseph to do many things that he would otherwise not had done. He obeyed God and married Mary even though she was pregnant. He trusted God, although her pregnancy was something impossible for him to understand. Then again after they were living in Bethlehem, God told them to move to Egypt. Egypt was a foreign country where they spoke a foreign language and lived completely different even worshipping false gods. This move was not an easy one for a man with a wife and a small child. However, he chose to obey. And as a result, Jesus' life was spared.

Just as God had a special plan for Joseph's life, God has an individualized special plan for each one of us. The Bible says that even from the time when we were in our mother's womb, He has known us and created a special plan for us. If we want to experience God's best for our lives and the lives of our children, we must obey very carefully His instructions for us. The Bible says God desires to speak to each one of us in our hearts as we pray and read His Word. He wants to lead us to a full and abundant life with Him. Many times God speaks directly to us as we pray and read His Word. He deals with us about specific situations, specific attitudes, and specific decisions we should make. We need to decide and confirm in our hearts that when the time comes, we will make, as Joseph did, the decision to obey God even if the situation is difficult.

*Is God speaking to you about something specific in your life? Is He asking you to change something in your life that is difficult for you to change? If so and if you feel comfortable, share this with the group. Each person should then write this need under your name in his or her prayer notebook-to be remembered and prayed for every day during the next week. God desires and will give you the strength to obey His plans for your life.

2. Before Jesus went back to heaven, after His resurrection, He gave all of us, His followers, a command. Let us review the final words of Jesus before He returned to heaven: “Go, therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all things that I have commanded you; and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age.” Later in this study, we will learn how to go and tell others about Jesus. But there is one command we all must do ourselves in obedience to His Words. We must be baptized in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit.

- ❖ Baptism is a simple act of obedience to the example left by Christ. It is getting in water with a Godly person and allowing yourself to go under the water briefly then coming up again.
- ❖ Jesus was not baptized as a baby. In the gospel of Luke, we learn that Jesus was taken to the temple as a baby. There the priest blessed Him and his parents. But this was not a baptism.
- ❖ His baptism was a choice that He made for himself. It was not something His parents did for Him. In the example of Christ, we all should go, ourselves, and seek to be baptized by a godly person.
- ❖ This is not a religious ritual that identifies you with a specific sect or denomination. This is not a spiritual experience that cleans the soul of sin. This is a symbol, a public demonstration of our commitment to follow Christ. The Bible teaches that baptism is a picture of the burial and resurrection of Christ. When we get baptized we identify ourselves with the burial and resurrection of Jesus.

*What do you think of Baptism? Do you think it is a difficult thing to be baptized in the example of Christ? Do you need to be baptized? Would you like to be baptized?

BEGINNING A NEW LIFE IN CHRIST

By
Christy A. Brawner

“The Temptation of Christ”-Lesson 3 **Matthew 4**

**“Man shall not live on bread alone, but by every word that
proceeds from the mouth of God.” Matthew 4:4**

Review

1. The prophet Isaiah said Jesus would be called Immanuel, which translates meaning, “God _____.”
2. Jesus said that when He finally does return to earth it will be like a bolt of _____.
3. Jesus said that when He returns to earth, no one will be confused as to who is the real Christ for everyone will see Him coming on the _____ with power and great glory.
4. Jesus said that before he arrives, many will do spectacular tricks pretending to be Christ. We must be careful as to not be _____ by these false prophets.
5. Jesus said we should consider ourselves _____ when people hurt us because of Jesus Christ because we will not lose our reward. He said we should treat these people with _____.
6. Jesus said the only one who knows when He will return to earth is the _____.
7. A man in the wilderness named _____ the _____ preached a message of repentance, wore camels’ skins and ate grasshoppers.
8. Many came to be baptized by John and confessed their _____.
9. John said that one was coming who would divide the people of the earth, and that those who rejected Him would be condemned to an unquenchable _____.

10. Jesus came and asked John to _____ Him.
11. At Jesus' baptism, the _____ came down like a dove and _____ spoke from heaven.
12. In the final words of Jesus before going back to heaven, He told His disciples to _____ everyone who accepted Christ as Lord.
13. We must be _____ not because it _____ us of our sins, but because it is a symbol that identifies us with _____.
14. Baptism symbolizes the _____, _____, and _____ of Jesus.

After His baptism, the Holy Spirit led Jesus into the wilderness where He was to be tempted by the devil. Jesus stayed there forty days and forty nights fasting. After these forty days, He was hungry. It was at this time that the devil came to Him and said, "If You are the Son of God, command that these stones become bread." Jesus answered Him using a passage found in the Old Testament saying, "Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God."

Next the devil took Him up into Jerusalem, the capital city, to the highest point of the temple. There he said to Him, "If you are the Son of God, throw Yourself down. For it is written: He shall give His angels charge over you,' and 'In their hands they shall bear you up.' Lest you dash your foot against a stone.'" Jesus answered him again using words from the Bible saying, "You shall not tempt the Lord your God."

Again, the devil took Him, this time up on an extremely high mountain. From this point, the two of them could look out over all the kingdoms of the world and their glory. Satan told Jesus, "All these things I will give You if You will fall down and worship me." Jesus responded by saying, "Away with you, Satan! For it is written, 'You shall worship the Lord your God and Him only you will serve.'" The devil obeyed Jesus' command and left. Then angels came and ministered to Jesus.

Oral Questions

1. Where did the Holy Spirit take Jesus to be tempted?
2. What did Jesus do for forty days before Satan came to tempt Him?

3. In the first two temptations, Satan challenged Jesus to prove that He is who?
4. In the first temptation, into what did Satan try to get Jesus to turn the stones?
5. How did Jesus overcome the devil in the first temptation?
6. In the second temptation, what did Satan try to get Jesus to do when he took Him to the top of the temple in Jerusalem?
7. How did Jesus overcome Satan in the second temptation?
8. In the third temptation, Satan promised to give Jesus all the kingdoms of the world if Jesus would only do one thing. What did Satan want Jesus to do?
9. How did Jesus overcome Satan in the third temptation?
10. Who came to minister to Jesus after Jesus sent the devil away?

Spiritual Truths- Lesson 3

Matthew 4

1. We will experience temptation, even after giving our lives to Christ. Unlike Christ, we do not have to go out to a wilderness to be tempted. The Bible teaches us that we are tempted not only by the devil, but also by our own desires (James 1:14). The Bible teaches us that there is a constant struggle in each of our hearts between our desire to do good and our desire to do evil. “For what I am doing, I do not understand. For what I will to do, that I do not practice; but what I hate, that I do....For the good I will to do, I do not do; but the evil I will not to do, that I practice.” Romans 7:15 & 19
2. You will experience temptation because you now have two natures in you. One is the spirit of the flesh and the other is the Spirit of God (the Holy Spirit) in you. Gal 5:16-17 says, “I say then: Walk in the Spirit, and you shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh. For the flesh lusts against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; and these are contrary to one another, so that you do not do the things that you wish.” There will be a daily struggle between your will verses God’s will in both the big and small things of life.
3. We can overcome temptation the same way Jesus did, through the power of the Word of God. Hebrews 4:12 says, “The Word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart.” *Read this verse more than one time. Ask members to tell you what they think this verse means.*

God’s Word is not just a book of advice. It is living Words that God uses to speak to each one of our hearts in an individual way. It penetrate deep into the parts of our soul that only God knows about.

The single most important thing that every follower of Christ **MUST** do is spend time **EVERY DAY** alone with the Father. Satan will do everything he can to keep you away from the Word of God because he knows that the Word of God is our source of strength. He will tell us we're too busy; we already do Bible study; we're too sleepy, the Bible is too hard to understand, and a million other excuses. But we must recognize these thoughts for what they are: **LIES**. We must make it a priority to spend time **EVERY DAY** in prayer and in the Word of God.

Here is an easy plan to follow:

1. Start out your time alone with the Father telling Him how much you love Him and praise Him for all the wonderful things that He is.
2. Thank Him for things He has done in your life, or answers to prayer that you have received.

*It is a good idea to make a page or section in your prayer notebook called "Thank you" and record those things that God does in your life. It is a good idea to always include the date. This way you can keep a record of how God is working in your life.

3. Pray for others: the people in your Bible study, your family, your friends, especially those who don't know Christ yet, and special needs. If you have a lot of people to pray for, you may need to make a page or section for each day of the week and divide out your family and friends praying for them once a week.

For example:

<u>Monday</u>	<u>Tuesday</u>
Aunt Pam	Grandmother
Uncle David	Mamaw
Rachel	Papaw
John David	Pastor Marcelo

*It may be helpful to stop and do this now together. So that everyone can begin his or her time of prayer without having to do this later.

4. Read and meditate on God's Word. The Bible teaches us that we should not just read the Bible like we read everything else, but we should MEDITATE on it. This means we should:
 - ◆ Read it slowly.
 - ◆ Reread it several times thinking deeply on the meaning of the words. It may take several readings before we can concentrate on the truth God is trying to get across.
 - ◆ Put your own name into the truth of the Word as it applies. For example, if the verse says "Honor your father and your mother" personalizing it means, "Christy, you must honor your father and your mother."
 - ◆ Pray this verse back to God and thank God for His blessings and ask Him for special needs. For example, "Thank you God for my father and my mother. God, I thank you that You are my heavenly father who meets my every need, and who is there when my earthly father is not."

The Bible has many spiritual truths that God wants to communicate to us about our life right now. Here is an example of how to meditate on God's Word.

*Let's begin with the chapter after the one we discussed today, Matthew 5. *Let's stop and let every person have time to read the first three or four verses. If someone is unable to read, the leader should read these verses to this person several times without any explanation.*

*Now let's each one try to understand the meaning of the verses, and if we can let's put our names into the verses. Do not be afraid to allow God's Spirit to speak to you. Here's an example, but certainly not the only way this verse can be applied to a person's life. These are words that the Lord spoke to me as I read these verses.

Verse 3: “Blessed are the poor in spirit for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.”

(Example of author’s “spiritual truth”) Vs. 3 I am blessed if I am poor in spirit, for I will inherit the Kingdom of God. Lord; help me to be poor in spirit. I do not want to be haughty, prideful and full of my own spirit. Thank you Lord, for the work that you are doing in my life. Thank you, Lord, for I know that I will inherit the Kingdom of God. I truly am a blessed person.

Verse 4: “Blessed are those who mourn, for they shall be comforted.”

(Example of author’s “spiritual truth”) Vs. 4 “It is difficult for me to imagine being blessed in mourning, for mourning is such a sad time. But as a follower of Christ, I am thankful because I know that I truly am blessed. For there is hope for us who have faith in Christ. God gives us hope and this truly is a comfort. Lord, thank you for being a comfort to me when I experienced mourning in my own life with the death of my mother. Thank you for the Godly people you put in my life who were physical comforts to me in my time of sorrow. Thank you for the Comfort I received from your Holy Spirit in my soul. Yes, Lord, I can see that as a believer I am blessed when I mourn. I love You, Lord for You care for me.

There is no special formula, no special words, or any special method. It is important only to meditate on the Words of God. Allow them to soak deep within your soul. When they penetrate into your life, God will speak there to your deepest parts.

By doing this on a continual basis, we become more like Christ in every way. Not only are we able to resist temptation, but we show more love and act more Godly in every area of our lives. Knowing God in a personal way is the KEY to a victorious Christian life.

*I recommend that you divide the last section in your prayer notebook. This one is the section for meditation. Write the date in every day you open your Bible, and record at least one truth that God is speaking to you about. Sometimes it is easier to meditate on the Word if you are writing down your thoughts, or it may be good just to go back later and read the

precious things the Lord is speaking to you in your heart. This is a very private and precious moment between you and your Master.

*I challenge you to make a commitment to yourself and your group that for one week, you will be faithful to spend at least fifteen minutes with the Father every single day. If possible, write down one thing per day that the Lord has spoken to you about. If you are unable to read, see if you can find someone to read to you maybe just one verse per day this next week, and see what happens when God's Words are allowed to penetrate your heart every day.

*Let us all continue to read this chapter that we began. There is no hurry to finish a chapter in a day. When you do finish the chapter just continue to the next chapter and then the next. Next week, let us all come back and share any experiences you may have had while meditating on God's Word.

BEGINNING A NEW LIFE IN CHRIST

By
Christy A. Brawner

“Casting Fear out of Fishers of Men”-Lesson 4 Matthew 4-8

“But He said to them, ‘Why are you fearful, O you of little faith.’ Then He arose and rebuked the winds and the sea, and there was a great calm.” Matthew 8:26

**As a leader, remember to ask the group members if they were able to read their Bibles and pray everyday. Give each person an opportunity to share experiences. Encourage their efforts.*

**Also because of the nature of this week’s study, it is important to have the group to have their time of prayer requests and intercession at the beginning of the study instead of the end.*

Review

1. The prophet Isaiah said that Jesus would be called Immanuel, which translates meaning, “God _____.”
2. On the Mount of Olives when Jesus was teaching His disciples about His Second Coming, He told them to be careful so that they would not be _____ by false prophets or people claiming to be Christ even if they were able to perform spectacular tricks.
3. Jesus said that when He finally does return to earth everyone will see Him coming in the _____ with great power and glory.
4. Jesus said the only one who knows when He will return to earth is the _____.
5. John the Baptist baptized many in the wilderness that repented of their _____.

6. Before Christ ascended to heaven, He commanded that all of His disciples be _____.
7. John said that One was coming who would divide the people of the earth, and that those who rejected Him would be condemned to an unquenchable _____.
8. In Jesus' first two temptations, Satan tried to get Him to perform tricks that would prove that He is _____.
9. In the third temptation, Satan asked Jesus to bow down and _____ him.
10. Jesus answered the devil three times using the _____ of _____.
11. If we want to know God better, it is necessary that we spend _____ with Him every day.
12. What are the two natures in you that are in conflict with each other? The spirit of the _____ and the Spirit of _____.
13. If we want to overcome temptation, it is necessary that we spend time ALONE with _____ everyday.
14. If we want to be more like Christ, it is necessary that we spend time ALONE with Him _____.

Jesus began His public ministry after He returned from the wilderness. He settled in the area around the Sea of Galilee, and based Himself out of the city of Capernaum. He preached in this area the same message that was preached by John the Baptist, "Repent, for the Kingdom of God is at hand."

The first two disciples called by Jesus were Simon Peter and Andrew. These two brothers were out together throwing their nets into the Sea of Galilee trying to catch some fish. Jesus called to them and said, "Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men."

From there He went on until He came to a man and his two sons who were sitting in their fishing boat mending their fishing nets. He called the two sons to follow Him. Their names were James and John, and their father's name was Zebedee.

So Jesus went around this whole area teaching in the Jewish synagogues, preaching the gospel of the kingdom and healing all kinds of

sicknesses and diseases. His fame grew to such an extent that even people from the neighboring country of Syria would come to be healed by Him.

So when Jesus saw that all these people were following Him, He took His disciples and went up a certain mountain. There He sat down and taught His disciples many things about the kingdom of God.

The people listened to Jesus' teachings and were astonished at the authority that He possessed. No one had ever heard anyone like this in his own synagogue.

When Jesus came down from the mountain the crowds were already waiting to follow Him wherever He went. One particular leper was among them and asked Jesus if He would be willing to clean him of his disease. Immediately the man was healed. Another man, a Roman soldier, asked Jesus if He would heal his paralytic servant who was lying at home. Jesus healed the servant.

Jesus went to Simon Peter's house because Peter's mother-in-law had caught a fever and had become very ill. Jesus touched her hand and the fever left her. She then got up and served everyone in the house.

So Jesus stayed there through the evening healing all the people and casting out many demons. But when He saw the masses swarming Him at that place, He commanded His disciples to depart with Him to the other side of the Sea of Galilee.

It was already late at night when they all got in the boat and set sail for the other side of the sea. Then suddenly, while they were in the middle of the sea, a storm came and covered the boat with waves. The disciples, many being fishermen, recognized the danger they were in and were very afraid. Jesus, however, had fallen asleep and did not wake up.

The disciples, horrified, woke Jesus saying, "Lord, save us! We are perishing!" Jesus answered them, "Why are you fearful, oh you of little faith?" Then He got up and spoke to the winds and the sea, and there was a great calm. The disciples marveled saying, "Who can this be, that even the winds and the sea obey Him."

Oral Questions

1. What was the message that Jesus preached to the people?
2. What were the names of two of Jesus' first disciples?
3. What was the profession of these first disciples?
4. Why did people want so desperately to see Jesus?
5. Why were the followers of Jesus impressed by how He taught them on the mountain?
6. After Jesus came down from the mountain, He healed a man with a serious health problem. What was this man's problem?
7. He then healed the servant of the Roman soldier. What was wrong with the servant?
8. Jesus cured one of Peter's relatives. Which relative was she?
9. Why did Jesus want to cross over to the other side of the Sea of Galilee?
10. What did Jesus do on the boat?
11. Why were Jesus' disciples afraid?
12. Why did Jesus rebuke them?
13. What was the disciples' reaction to Jesus' ability to calm the storm?

Spiritual Truths- Lesson 4

Matthew 4-8

1. Jesus calls ALL of us to be “fishers of men”. The freedom we have in Christ is something Jesus commands us to share with people in every country, city and neighborhood of the world. These were His final words to His followers before He returned to heaven. On the last week of this study we are going to learn how to share our faith in Jesus clearly. However, many of us are afraid to even begin to share Christ with others. We think things like, “who am I, with all my limitations, how can I ever convince someone to follow Christ? And even if I ever could, I live in just one very small corner of the world, how can Christ expect us to make a difference in other parts of the world?”

The Bible teaches us that even if we were the most dramatic and polished speaker that has ever lived, we still never would be able to convince a person to follow Christ. When we gave our hearts to Christ, it was not a person who touched us, but the presence of the Holy Spirit of God who moved us to repentance. John 16:8 says, “When He has come, He will convict the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgement.”

Our role as fishers of men is to hold out the net of our lives and bring in all the fish that the Holy Spirit brings our way.

One of the very first steps to sharing our faith in Christ with others is by being able to share what Christ has done in our lives. This kind of presentation is called a “testimony.” The word “testimony” is a word used in courts of law. Witnesses testify as to the things that they know to be the truth, things they have witnessed firsthand. People can argue that you are crazy, an unreliable witness, but they can never deny what you have experienced firsthand. Here is an exercise for us to stop and do together.

- Let each person think back to how his/her life was before they knew Christ.
- Then think how Christ was first introduced to you.
- Think about the moment the Holy Spirit moved in your heart, and you knew that Jesus was God and you needed Him in your life.

- Think about your decision to give your life to Christ
- Finally, think about the difference Christ has made in your life.
- After having time to process this in your mind, let's go around the circle and let each person share this testimony with the group. IT IS IMPORTANT THAT IT TAKES NO MORE THAN 3 MINUTES.

*Also it is time, as a group to begin supporting each person by praying during our individual quiet times for those people that God has shown us need to accept Him, perhaps there are people from work or school. There may be close family members that have not yet accepted Christ's love. Pray together for these people. Let each person write down in his/her prayer notebook the names mentioned by each other in the group. This is a group effort to bring everyone to Christ.

*But let us also not forgot the people living in places far away from us. It is our responsibility to pray for these people as well.

**Idea for leader- Perhaps you or your pastor knows of a missionary that lives in another country or another part of this country. Why not, as a group, begin to pray for that person, their family and the people they minister with. Do this as a group weekly during the intercession period of the Bible study. Have someone in the group write the missionary asking about special needs and prayer requests. Pray about, and look for ways your group can help share the Good News of Jesus to people in far away places all over the world. Stop and discuss this now before moving on to the second spiritual truth.*

2. Jesus rebuked the disciples, not because they woke Him up to calm the storm, but because they were full of fear. The disciples looked around at the storm. They were familiar with storms and knew that this one was a bad one. What they were not yet familiar with was the power of God in their lives. They did not yet realize that God is bigger than any storm in their lives, and He was sitting in the boat with them.

I have a one and a half-year-old daughter who is beginning to explore

the world around her. She runs around the house, opens up drawers, pulls out pots and pans and everything else she can get her little hands into. One day, we were at a friend's house eating supper, and she was playing on the floor in their dining area while we were eating until their big black dog came strolling into the room where we were eating. My daughter immediately ran as fast as her little legs could carry her over to me yelling, "Mama!" I picked her up, and her muscles immediately relaxed in my arms. Why? Because she knew that I love her, and she trusted me to take care of her. It was but a few short minutes until she was completely at ease and was even reaching out her hand to pet the dog.

We are God's children from the moment we give Him the control of our lives. He is our protector. He is our safety and the safety for our children. He loves us, and in our fear we should immediately run to Him. In His arms He casts out fear. There is no fear when we live our lives every day under the wings of obedience to Jesus Christ.

There was a man in the Old Testament named David. He went through many difficult and scary circumstances because a man named King Saul tried to kill him. As David learned many truths about God and grew closer to Him, he wrote many poems called "Psalms". These are poems inspired by God to teach about God. There are 150 of these, not all by David, but they are found in the Old Testament. He wrote several Psalms about fear, but I have chosen one for us to read and meditate on this week- Psalm 27. Read it during your prayer time this week. If you do not have the Old Testament, I have copied for you this Psalm and included it in this material. Ask God to teach you to lay all of your fears down and climb up into His arms of love and safety.

*Close this week in prayer, but this time let each one find a partner preferably of the same gender. Talk to each other about things in your lives that you greatly fear. Then pray for each other about fears, cite them specifically before the Lord. Ask God to take away the fear and replace it with faith in Him. Tell God of your desire to put all of your trust in Him, even about those things that are terrifying.

Psalm 27

The Lord is my light and my salvation;
Whom shall I fear?
The Lord is the strength of my life; of whom shall I be afraid?
When the wicked came against me to eat up my flesh,
My enemies and foes, They stumbled and fell.
Though an army may encamp against me, My heart shall not fear;
Though war may rise against me, In this I will be confident.

One thing I have desired of the Lord, That I will seek:
That I may dwell in the house of the Lord all the days of my life.
To behold the beauty of the LORD, and to inquire in His temple.
For in the time of trouble He shall hide me in His pavilion;
In the secret place of His tabernacle He shall hide me;
He shall set me high upon a rock.

And now my head shall be lifted up above my enemies all around me;
Therefore I will offer sacrifices of joy in His tabernacle;
I will sing, yes, I will sing praises to the Lord.
Hear, O LORD, when I cry with my voice!
Have mercy also upon me, and answer me.
When You said, "Seek My Face,"
My heart said to You, "Your face, LORD, I will seek."
Do not hide Your face from me;
Do not turn Your servant away in anger; You have been my help;
Do not leave me nor forsake me, O God of my salvation.
When my father and my mother forsake me,
Then the LORD will take care of me.

Teach me Your way, O LORD,
And lead me in a smooth path, because of my enemies.
Do not deliver me to the will of my adversaries;
For false witnesses have risen against me,
And such as breath out violence.

I would have lost heart, unless I had believed that I would see the good of
the LORD

In the land of the living.

Wait on the LORD;

Be of good courage;

And He shall strengthen your heart;

Wait, I say, on the LORD!

BEGINNING A NEW LIFE IN CHRIST

By
Christy A. Brawner

“Love-The Meaning of Christ’s Earthly Ministry”-Lesson 5 **Matthew 8-10**

“But when He saw the multitudes, He was moved with compassion for them, because they were weary and scattered, like sheep having no shepherd.” Matthew 9:36

**Before starting this lesson, please check to see how many people have been having their time alone with Christ. It is important not be critical, but in love, encourage one another to stay in God’s Word every day. Invite them to continue reading the book of Matthew until the very end. Ask if people have been praying for the people mentioned that need Christ.. See if anyone had an opportunity to share their testimony during the week.*

Review

1. The prophet Isaiah said that Jesus would be called Immanuel which means “God _____.”
2. Jesus said that when He finally returns to earth, everyone will see Him coming in the _____ with great power and glory.
3. Jesus said that no one knows when He will return to earth except the _____.
4. John baptized many in the wilderness who repented of their _____.
5. John said One was coming who would divide the people of the earth, and that those who rejected Him would be condemned to an unquenchable _____.
6. Jesus answered the devil three times using the _____ of God.

7. If we want to grow closer to God we must spend time alone with Him _____.
8. Jesus called all of us to be “_____ of men.”
9. What was Jesus doing on the boat during the storm?
10. Why were the disciples afraid?
11. Jesus rebuked His disciples because they were _____ and did not trust Him.
12. The Bible teaches us that when we live under the wings of Christ’s protection we do not need to have _____.

After crossing the sea of Galilee during the fearful storm, Jesus and His disciples arrived on the other side of the sea and there in that place they met two men who were demon-possessed. These men were fierce and had been in the tombs. Suddenly one of them cried out to Jesus, “What have we to do with You, Jesus, You Son of God? Have you come here to torment us before the time?”

Some distance away from where the place where the demon-possessed men were, a group of herdsmen was watching their pigs feed near the shore. The demons begged Jesus that if He were going to expel them from the bodies of the men, to send them to the bodies of the pigs. Jesus agreed saying, “Go!” When the demons entered into the pigs, the pigs sprang violently out of control plunging recklessly down the steep terrain into the sea to their deaths.

The herdsmen ran into the city telling everyone what had happened to the men as well as what had happened to their pigs. The townspeople came out and begged Jesus to leave the region. Jesus climbed into His boat, and returned to Galilee.

Having returned to Galilee, a paralytic was brought to Jesus. Jesus cured the man of his paralysis and also forgave him of his sins. The onlookers marveled and glorified God, but the Pharisees considered Him to be a blasphemer.

Moving on from there, Jesus came across a tax collector named Matthew. He called Matthew to follow Him, and immediately He did. Jesus went to eat with him as well as other tax collectors and people of terrible reputations in the city. When the Pharisees saw with whom Jesus

was eating, they questioned Jesus' disciples as to why Jesus would do this. Jesus answered them saying "I desire mercy, not sacrifice."

Now Jesus went from there and reached out to all people from all walks of life. There was another man who was a ruler among his people. This man had a daughter that had died. Jesus went to the mourning ceremony, took the girl by the hand and raised her from the dead.

He restored sight to two blind men who followed Him and begged to be healed. He restored speech to a man who not only was mute but was also demon-possessed. He cast out the demons and the man was healed.

Jesus saw the many needs of the people and was moved with compassion. The needs were so great; the people were like sheep having no shepherd. He said to His disciples, "The harvest truly is plentiful, but the laborers are few. Therefore, pray the Lord of the harvest to send out laborers into His harvest."

He then took His disciples and sent them all over the country of Israel. He gave them power to meet many needs of the people; their purpose was to share and show His love. He gave them specific instructions to seek out people who were willing to listen to the Good News of Christ. He told them that when they found such people, they would leave the peace of God on the home of that person. But He warned them that many would reject them and their words.

He said to them, "I send you out as sheep in the midst of wolves. Therefore, be wise as serpents and harmless as doves." He told them not to worry about the physical needs. For the Father who knows even the number of hairs on our head is in control of all things and values us greatly.

He concluded His remarks before sending them out saying, "And whoever gives one of these little ones only a cup of water in the name of a disciple, assuredly, I say to you, he shall by no means lose his reward."

Oral Questions

1. Who did Jesus meet after He and His disciples crossed the Sea of Galilee after the fearful boat ride?
2. What was wrong with these two men?

3. What did Jesus do for them?
4. Why did the pigs throw themselves into the Sea?
5. Why did the townspeople ask Jesus to leave their region?
6. What did Jesus do for the paralytic?
7. Why did the Pharisees call Jesus a blasphemer?
8. What was the name of the tax collector Jesus met and called to follow Him?
9. Why were the Pharisees critical of Jesus and His dinner companions at this particular place?
10. What was Jesus' response to these people?
11. What did Jesus do for the ruler's daughter?
12. What did Jesus do for the blind men?
13. How did Jesus heal the man who could not speak? What was wrong with him?
14. What did Jesus send out His disciples to do?
15. Jesus told His disciples to be as wise as _____ and harmless as _____.
16. He told them not to worry about what kind of things?
17. He said that God knows even the number of _____ that we have?
18. He told them that if people would do as little as give a cup of water to a particular group of people that they would not lose their reward? What group of people was he talking about?

Spiritual Truths-Lesson 5

Matthew 8-10

1. Jesus cares for each person. He cares for the demon-possessed, the sick, the poor, the wealthy and especially the children. Everyone is worthy and of value in the kingdom of God!!!
2. Men do not always care for other people. In the encounter with the demon-possessed men, the townspeople were so upset about the pigs that they wanted Jesus out of their region. They didn't care about all the ways Jesus had helped the men. They were concerned about the financial losses they had suffered. It is a very easy thing to value money over people. Unfortunately, most of us fall into this trap. I Timothy 6:10 says, "The love of money is the root of all kinds of evil, for which some have strayed from the faith in their greediness, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows." You also may remember the words of Jesus in Matthew 6:19-21 where He says, "Do not lay up for yourselves treasure on earth, where moth and rust destroy and where thieves break in and steal; but lay up for yourselves treasure in heaven, where neither moth nor rust destroys and where thieves do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also." Money is powerful. It can control us, or we can give it to the Lord and He can control us.
 - Think, how do I spend my money every week? It may be good to write it down.
 - Ask the question, do I honor Jesus with how I spend my money?
 - Am I buying things or doing things that bring dishonor to God? Am I hurting others with how I spend money? Am I helping others with how I spend my money?

In the Old Testament, God required of every person to give 10% of what they had to God. In the New Testament, we are told to give our lives and everything we have to God. But traditionally, we have followed the Old Testament law and given 10% of our financial earnings to the work of

God, or the church. This is called a tithe. Begin praying now, how much of your money does the Lord want you to give to His work? The Bible teaches, that God does bless those who contribute to the growth of His kingdom. The Bible also teaches that Jesus will provide for all of our needs. You may be thinking, “But God does not understand how poor I am?” “God doesn’t understand how big of a debt I have made for myself?” Jesus was also born in a very poor earthly family. Jesus understands the problems of poverty, but He asks for all of us to be faithful in obedience to whatever He asks of us to do. Ask the Lord, how He wants you to be a part of financially supporting His ministry.

3. To be a follower of Christ means to follow His example and love others like He did. It is true that we cannot heal people as Jesus did, but Jesus still cures and heals people. We should be faithful to pray for the sick. We should stay by their sides and hold their hands in their moments of pain. We should tell them of Jesus’ love for them. We should pray for the demon-possessed. Jesus still expels demons all over the world through the prayers of His people. We should pray for, and help the needy. We should do what we can to help with their physical needs, but especially tell them about the love of Christ who can transform their lives on the inside. We should especially help the children. Jesus commanded His disciples to do all these things, but He promised a special reward for people who will help children.
4. Some people are not easy to love, but God desires for us to have mercy. Tax collectors in those days were disliked for a very good reason. They worked for a corrupt government collecting money from the people, and most of them charged people more than they owed and pocketed the extra for themselves. Showing love to a person who has stolen something from you is not easy to do, especially if this person is not repentant at all for what he has done. But Jesus tells us that as followers of Him, we have no right to condemn these people even if what they are doing is completely wrong. Our duty is to pray for them, love them, and show them the truth about God’s forgiveness. If they repent of their sins they too will receive God’s complete

forgiveness. The Bible says that we are all sinners deserving of punishment. The Bible says we have received forgiveness and mercy, so we should also show forgiveness and mercy, even if this is an almost impossible thing for us to do without God's power in our lives.

5. The needs of the world are so great, we can not do this alone. There are millions of people who have never experienced the love of Christ. There are millions of people, who have never experienced love from anyone. There are millions of people, who would, if someone would show them, give their lives to Jesus and experience His love. We must do what we can, but we must also pray that God would bring others to help bring more people to know God's love.
6. You can show your love for God and one another by giving a tithe to the work of God through your local church. God uses the local church to minister to people's problems spiritually, emotionally and physically. God uses your tithe to help the church accomplish its tasks.

Discussion Questions

1. What are ways that I can, in my circumstances and in my world, show God's loves to others?
2. What are the greatest needs of the people around me? How are people hurting most where I live?
3. How can I reach out to the hurting people around me?
4. How can I show God's love especially to children?
5. In what ways do I let money come before people in my life?
6. Do I honor God with my money?
7. How can I show those around me God's mercy in my life?

**This is another good time to discuss supporting a missionary in another part of the word and praying for a people group of another country who has not yet heard of God's love.*

BEGINNING A NEW LIFE IN CHRIST

By
Christy A. Brawner

“Betrayal and Forgiveness”-Lesson 6 **Matthew 21-27:10**

“If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.” I John 1:9

Review

1. The prophet Isaiah said that Jesus would be called Immanuel, which means, “God _____.”
2. Jesus said that no one knows when Jesus will return to earth except the _____.
3. John baptized many in the wilderness that repented of their _____.
4. Jesus answered the devil three times using the _____ of God.
5. If we want to grow closer to God, we must spend time alone with Him _____.
6. Jesus called all of us to be “_____ of men.”
7. Jesus showed love to all people by _____ them of their sicknesses.
8. Jesus was moved with compassion for the people because He saw their many _____.
9. Jesus told His followers to go out to all people, but to be wise as _____ and harmless as _____.
10. Jesus said that He knows even the number of _____ on our heads.
11. He said that if people would give as little as a cup of water to a child they would not lose their _____.
12. Jesus told His disciples in the boat during the storm not to _____.

Jesus taught, preached and healed many people in the province of Galilee, but still many rejected His Words. Jesus explained to His disciples that this was also according to God's plan for He chose to hide His truths from the wise and prudent and to reveal them to babes.

The time came of which He had forewarned His disciples. It was time for Him to go to Jerusalem, to suffer many things from the chief priests and other religious rulers, to be killed and to be raised from the dead.

His arrival into Jerusalem was a grand affair. People lined the streets on both sides throwing down their clothes and palm branches making a carpet for Him to walk on. And as he passed by them seated on a donkey they yelled, "Hosanna to the Son of David! Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord! Hosanna in the highest!"

Jesus spent several days in Jerusalem teaching at the temple, preaching and healing many people. But He had many confrontations and conflicts with the Pharisees and Sadducees.

Judas Iscariot, one of Jesus' very own disciples, approached the chief priests and offered to betray Jesus to them for money. They offered Him thirty pieces of silver. He took it.

On the night of the Passover celebration, the most important Jewish holiday of the year, Jesus sat with His disciples for a final meal together. At this meal, Jesus picked up the bread that they were eating, broke it and said, "Take, eat; this is my body." Then he raised the glass of wine, gave thanks over it and said, "Drink from it all of you. This is My blood of the new covenant, which is shed for many for the forgiveness of sins."

After dinner, all the disciples went up on the Mount of Olives. Here Jesus warned them that they would all be made to stumble. Peter stubbornly insisted that He would never betray His Lord. Jesus predicted that he not only would betray Him but would deny Him three times before the rooster crowed that very morning.

From there, Jesus took His disciples to Gethsemane. He spent the rest of the night praying. He was sorrowful even to death because of all that was transpiring. He asked His disciples to pray with Him, but they all fell asleep. They awoke only at the time of Judas' arrival in the garden with the priests and the people who came to take Jesus away.

Judas came to Jesus and kissed Him as a sign of His betrayal. The chief priests grabbed Jesus and took Him to the house of Caiaphas, the chief priest at the times. The disciples fled from Gethsemane.

While Jesus was in the house being tried by Caiaphas and the other leaders, Peter was outside in the courtyard. While he was sitting, a servant girl came up to him and said, “You also were with Jesus of Galilee.” Peter denied it. He then moved to the gate and waited there until another girl saw Him and accused Him of being with Jesus. Peter again denied it, this time with an oath. A little later, other people approached Peter and accused him of being with Jesus. This time he began to curse and swear saying, “I do not know the Man!” Immediately the rooster crowed, and Peter remembered Jesus’ words on the Mount of Olives. He went away and wept bitterly.

When the morning came, the chief priests took Jesus to Pilate to be put to death. Judas seeing that Jesus had been condemned to death was remorseful and tried to return the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests. He said to them, “I have sinned by betraying innocent blood.” They answered him, “What is that to us? You see to it!” “Judas then threw the money on the floor of the temple, went away from there and hanged himself.”

Oral Questions

1. God’s plan is to hide the truth from the wise and prudent and reveal it to whom?
2. How was Jesus treated as He entered the city of Jerusalem?
3. Why did Judas approach the chief priests, and why did they give him thirty pieces of silver?
4. During Jesus’ last Passover dinner with His disciples, He told them that the wine and bread were special. How so?
5. Jesus told them that His blood must be shed. Why?
6. On the Mt. of Olives, Jesus told His followers that they would be made to stumble. Peter denied this. Jesus then makes a special prediction about Peter, what was it?
7. With what gesture does Judas betray Jesus?
8. While Jesus was being tried by the religious leaders where was Peter?

9. Two girls came up to Peter at separate times and accused Him of something. What?
10. A third time several people came and claimed that Peter was with Jesus. How did Peter respond to these people?
11. When did Judas feel guilty for betraying Jesus?
12. Why did he go back to the chief priests?
13. What did Judas do when the chief priests refused to accept back the betrayal money?

Spiritual Truths- Lesson 6

Matthew 11-27:10

1. During Jesus' last meal with His disciples, He began a tradition that has been observed by followers of Christ all over the world since that time until today. We call this tradition the Lord's Supper. The Lord's Supper is not a supernatural event that takes away sins or does something special in our bodies. It is not a moment in which ordinary bread and juice magically become Jesus' blood and flesh. It is a time for followers of Christ to come together, eat bread, drink wine and remember Jesus' sacrifice on the cross. It is a time to remember the price Jesus paid for the sins in our lives. It is a time of joy and thanksgiving as we rejoice together in the forgiveness He bought for us. 2 Corinthians 11:23-33 teaches us that it is a serious occasion; it is not something to do lightly. It is a time to meditate on His sacrifice for us and examine our own lives in light of what He has done for us on the cross.
2. God knows our failures even before we do, and He still accepts us and wants to use us in His kingdom. From the time Jesus first called Peter to be a "fisher of men", He knew that on this very night Peter would betray Him. But as we continue to read our Bibles, we learn in Acts that God used Peter to lead thousands of people to Christ. In fact there are two books in the Bible that were written by Peter. In Acts 2, right after Jesus returns to heaven, we see Peter preaching a sermon in Jerusalem in front of the very people he was so afraid of on the night of the betrayal.

In the same way, our failures are no surprise to God. Even after we accept Christ, we will have failures in our lives. We will sin; we will betray Him; we will do the very things we hate.

3. What then should we do after we fail before God?

There were two men who betrayed Christ that night. One man was Peter, a man who betrayed Christ, but eventually was used greatly by

God. The other was Judas who also betrayed God, but then committed suicide. Many people mistakenly believe that the reason Peter became successful and Judas failed was because Judas' betrayal was greater. This is not so. The Bible teaches us that we are ALL sinners. We all betray God and deserve eternal punishment for our betrayal. But if this is not true, what was Judas' tragic mistake?

-Judas did not repent of His sins and seek God's forgiveness.

There are many people who know when they have done something wrong. Many people feel horrible guilt for things they have done in their lives that were wrong. Some people have done things so terrible that they feel that even God could never forgive them for these things. The Bible teaches us that THIS IS NOT TRUE.

I John 1:9 says, **“If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and cleanse us from ALL unrighteousness.”**

This means that if a person:

- ◆ Comes to God
- ◆ Tells God what he/she has done
- ◆ Repents
- ◆ Asks God to forgive him/her of this sin
- ◆ **THEN GOD IS FAITHFUL TO FORGIVE THIS PERSON OF ANYTHING-NO MATTER HOW HORRIBLE THE SIN IS, JESUS' SACRIFICE ON THE CROSS IS WORTHY ENOUGH TO CLEANSE THIS SIN.**

This also means, that as a follower of Christ, we should never live defeated remembering past sins that have already been forgiven by God. We do not need to live in guilt for things Christ has already forgotten. Peter repented of his sins and was able to be used by God. We also may repent of our sins and be used greatly by God.

Judas truly did have wickedness in his heart. It is a horrible thing to betray a close Friend, and to cause this Person to suffer a horrible death when He

was completely innocent of all wrong doing. However, the truth is that God still had a plan for Judas' life. Even Judas was worthy of forgiveness by God. Jesus' sacrifice of His life on the cross was big enough to forgive even Judas. If only he had come to Christ, but instead he allowed the guilt to take control of his life, it became too much and he ended his own life.

4. Jesus told His disciples that our covenant or agreement with God is made possible because of His blood that was shed for the forgiveness of sins. We did nothing to receive God's forgiveness in our lives. Once we have accepted Jesus into our hearts, there is nothing we can do to lose this forgiveness. Ephesians 1:13b-14 says, "in whom also, having believed, you were sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise who is the guarantee of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, to the praise of His glory." John 3:16 says that you have "eternal life". Once Christ enters you He never leaves you. You are saved forever from that point on. The Bible says that we should remember Christ's sacrifice for us and quit sinning. We must do our best to live every day of our lives in complete obedience to Him. But 1 John 2:1 reminds us that if we do sin, we must remember who is living inside of us. We must remember that Jesus is in our lives as our defender before the Father. He is the substitute payment for our sins.

Discussion

1. What do you think of Peter and of Judas?
2. What does the word, "forgiveness" mean to you?
3. Have you ever felt so guilty that you can identify with Judas?
4. Do not say anything out loud, but is it possible that you did something so horrible you find it difficult to accept Christ's forgiveness in your life?
5. What is Jesus words to you in this situation? **Have everyone recite or read aloud 1 John 1:9**

Each person should bow your head and speak to God all that is in his/her heart. If there is sin there, confess it. Ask God to take away the guilt. Ask God, by His mercy, to keep you away, at all costs, from this sin.

Confess openly that Jesus' sacrifice on the cross is enough to forgive you of your sin. Claim this truth.

***It may be that later on, Satan may try to attack you with accusing thoughts of guilt. These thoughts are NOT from God. These thoughts are not real guilt but false guilt. If you begin to have these feelings of false guilt about something God has already forgiven, immediately stop and pray. Say,**

“Thank you Jesus for Your forgiveness of my sin (say the sin specifically). Lord, thank you that Your sacrifice is worthy to forgive even me. I trust in Your blood, and I ask that You remove these guilty thoughts from my mind.”

God is faithful, and He will do this. If you pray to God every time Satan attacks you, it won't be long before he will quit attacking, and you will be free of these thoughts of guilt forever. We have complete victory over every area of our life in Christ!

BEGINNING A NEW LIFE IN CHRIST

By
Christy A. Brawner

“The Crucifixion of Christ”-Lesson 7 **Matthew 26-27**

“For the message of the cross is foolishness to those who are perishing, but to us who are being saved it is the power of God.” I Corinthians 1:18

1. The prophet Isaiah said that Jesus would be called Immanuel, which means, “God _____.”
2. Jesus said that no one knows when He will return to earth except the _____.
3. John baptized many in the wilderness that repented of their _____.
4. Jesus answered the devil three times using the _____ of _____.
5. If we want to grow closer to God and be able to resist temptation, we must spend time _____ with Him _____.
6. Jesus called His followers to be “_____ of _____.”
7. Jesus told His disciples not to _____ because of His presence with them.
8. Jesus spent His time on earth _____ in the synagogues, _____ about the Kingdom of God, and _____ the diseases of the people.
9. Jesus told His followers to go out to all people, but to be _____ as serpents and harmless as _____.
10. Jesus said that He knows even the number of _____ on our _____.
11. On the Mount of Olives Jesus predicted that _____ would betray Him three times before the rooster crowed that morning.

12. _____ was the disciple who betrayed Jesus for thirty pieces of silver.
13. _____ repented of His betrayal and was later used greatly by God.
14. _____ felt very guilty for what He had done and went out and killed himself.
15. The Bible teaches that if we “_____ our sins, He is faithful and just to _____ us our sins and cleans us from _____ unrighteousness.”

While Peter was outside the door to Caiaphas' house, Jesus was inside being accused by all kinds of false testimony. None of it was credible enough to convict Him. Jesus allowed His accusers to continue to attack Him without even opening His mouth in His own defense. Having been unable to accomplish anything, Caiaphas asked Jesus, “Tell us if You are the Christ, the Son of God!”

Finally Jesus broke His silence saying, “It is as you said. Nevertheless, I say to you, hereafter you will see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of the Power, and coming on the clouds of heaven.”

This was evidence enough for Caiaphas, and he ripped his clothes pronouncing Jesus a blasphemer. They took Jesus, spat on His face, mocked Him, and beat and slapped Him.

When morning came, the chief priests and leaders bound Him and led Him away to Pontius Pilate, the Roman governor over the province of Judea. The governor asked Jesus, “Are you the king of the Jews?” His answer was simply, “As you say.” The chief priests then proceeded to bring forth their list of accusations, but Jesus again did not even respond. The governor marveled at Jesus' ability to remain silent. He did not find Jesus guilty and tried to find a peaceful way to release Him.

As it was Passover, the most important Jewish holiday of the year, it had always been Pilate's custom to release one prisoner at the will of the people. This year, he brought forth two men before the people. One was Barrabas, a hated convict, and Jesus. He asked the people which one they wished for him to release. The people, having been stirred up by the chief priests, hollered out for Barrabas to be released and Jesus to be

crucified. Pilate then yelled to the people, “Why, what evil has He done?” Their answer was, “Let Him be crucified!” Pilate saw that he could no longer do anything with these people for they were out of control, so he consented to their demands saying, “I am innocent of the blood of this just Person. You see to it.” The people responded by saying, “His blood be on us and on our children.” Pilate released Barrabas and commanded Jesus to be whipped and then sent Him to his headquarters, called the Praetorian, where He would be further tortured.

At the Praetorian, He was stripped and dressed in a scarlet robe. They gave Him a reed to hold and stuck a crown of thorns into His scalp. The soldiers made fun of Him and spat on Him. They kneeled before Him in mock tribute. Then they took the reed that had been in His hand and struck Him on the head with it.

After the soldiers had finished all they were to do in the Praetorian, they put His clothes back on Him and led Him away to Golgotha, meaning Place of the Skull. This was the place where the crucifixions were to take place. As they were walking from the Praetorian, they forced a man named Simon to carry Jesus’ cross for Him.

While Jesus was hanging on the cross, the soldiers divided up His clothes and threw lots to see who would get what. They watched Him die from underneath the cross. The chief priests and other elders also came out to see Him hang, they laughed at Him and made sarcastic comments as to why He wouldn’t get down from the cross. Many other people came by the place where He was crucified shaking their heads and making rude comments. Even the two thieves who were hanging next to Him on the cross did not refrain from making hateful remarks.

But from the sixth hour until the ninth hour darkness came over all the earth. Jesus cried out to God, “Eli, Eli Lama Sabachtani!” Which means “My God, My God, why hast thou forsaken me?!” Hearing this cry, an onlooker ran and got a sponge full of sour wine and tried to give it to Jesus. The rest of the crowd said, “Let Him alone. Let us see if Elijah will come to save Him.” Then Jesus cried out again and gave up His Spirit.

At His death there were many strange things that occurred all over Jerusalem testifying to who He was. The veil in the temple which separated

the Holiest place from the rest of the temple ripped from top to bottom; the earth quaked, rocks shattered; but also many graves were opened and the bodies of followers of Christ who had already died came out of their graves and walked around the city of Jerusalem.

The evening of Jesus' death, a very rich man named Joseph of Arimathea went to Pilate and asked if He could take the body to be buried. Pilate agreed, and Jesus was taken to a brand new tomb that had been carved out a rock. Joseph took Jesus' body, wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, laid Jesus down in the cave and rolled a large stone over the entrance of the tomb before He departed with Mary Magdalene and the other Mary from that place.

Oral Questions

1. How did the Jewish leaders finally convict Jesus in the trial at Caiaphas' house?
2. How did Jesus respond to all of their accusations against Him?
3. How did Pilate react to Jesus' ability to remain quiet before all of His accusers?
4. Who was Barrabas?
5. How did the Roman soldiers treat Jesus?
6. How did the priests and other onlookers treat Jesus as He hung on the cross?
7. What happened all over the earth between the sixth and the ninth hour?
8. What did Jesus cry out before He yielded His Spirit to God?
9. What strange things happened at Jesus' death?
10. What did Joseph of Arimathea do with Jesus' body?

Spiritual Truths- Lesson 7

Matthew 26-27

God's ways are not man's ways. Let us read together a passage of Scripture found in I Corinthians 1:18-21,27. *Read this passage two or three times, so everyone has time to think about what the Bible is saying.*

“For the message of the cross is foolishness to those who are perishing, but to us who are being saved it is the power of God. For it is written:

‘I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent.’

Where is the wise? Where is the scribe? Where is the disputer of this age? Has God not made foolish the wisdom of this world? For since, in the wisdom of God, the world through wisdom did not know God, it pleased God through the foolishness of the message preached to save those who believe....But God choose the foolish things of the world to put to shame the wise, and God has chosen the weak things of the world to put to shame the things that are mighty.”

As we look at the life of Christ, we can see that God's ways are not man's ways.

- ❖ When an earthly king is born, he is born in a palace. But God sent Jesus, the King of Kings, to be born in poverty.
- ❖ When someone is to announce an important message or the arrival of an important person, this messenger is rich, beautifully dressed and driving around in an important vehicle. God sent John the Baptist wearing camels' hair to announce the arrival of Jesus in the desert where people had to go out of their way to hear His announcement.
- ❖ When a human king has an enemy who he can easily overpower, he destroys Him immediately. Jesus deliberately went out in the desert to be tempted by Satan, and He has not

yet destroyed Satan.

- ❖ When a human king chooses His closest companions, He picks men who have graduated from the finest schools, come from the finest families, and who have lots of money. Jesus chose, among other common professions, fishermen and tax collectors.
- ❖ An earthly king forces his people to obey Him and punishes those who defy him. Jesus taught us to love. He allows people to choose to follow Him or reject Him.
- ❖ A human king makes others work for him, pay taxes and some even kill those who betray His government. Jesus died on the cross deliberately because He wanted to pay the price for our sins. He wants us to be free to live eternally with Him.
- ❖ When an earthly king dies, he is buried and his son takes his place. When Jesus died, He rose again and reigns for eternity.

Jesus is not a man. He is God. He is to be worshipped, adored and obeyed. He loves us and wants the best for us. His life here on earth is totally incomprehensible. God's ways are so much greater than are small minds can comprehend that they are illogical to men.

*The Bible teaches us that one of the things that the Lord loves is to hear the praises of His people. Praise simply means to tell Jesus how much you love Him and appreciate all the wonderful things that He is. God loves to hear our hearts love for Him. He loves to hear things like, "I love you Lord because you loved me;" or "I praise you Lord because you are a great and powerful God." These are phrases that tell God who He is to me personally.

As we think about the life and death of Christ, we can only be amazed to think what God, the Creator of the universe did for us. His love for us is more than we can ever understand. His ways are so much greater and better than anything we could ever even appreciate. This is an appropriate time to stop for a moment and praise God.

The purpose of His crucifixion was to be a sacrifice for our sin. He was

punished, judged and condemned for your sins that you have committed and will commit. We should thank and praise Him daily for being our Lord and Savior.

We are going to do something called “sentence prayers.” A sentence prayer is where everyone prays a sentence at a time as thoughts come to his/her mind that he/she would like to express to God. Let’s all bow our heads and think about God, Jesus, what He did during His ministry on earth, what He did on the cross, on His return, and what He is doing right now in our lives. Then let’s take turns putting in words our feelings towards God. For example, “Dear Father, I love you because you saved me.” Than another person says another sentence, “Father God, You are a kind father to me.” Each person can and should pray as many times as he/she feels led to by the Spirit. This is a time to share publicly that, which is in our hearts. Continue for as long as needed. Then move on to prayer requests and pray for one another.

**Leader, remind members to begin to include a time of praise daily in their time alone with God. Be sure to ask members every week how their quiet times are going. Encourage the ones who are having trouble, and allow people to share things that God has shown them or neat things God has done for them.*

BEGINNING A NEW LIFE IN CHRIST

By
Christy A. Brawner

“The Resurrection of Christ”- Lesson 8

Matthew 27

**“For I know the thoughts I think toward you, says the LORD, thoughts of peace and not of evil, to give you a future and a hope.”
Jeremiah 29:11**

Review

1. The prophet Isaiah said that Jesus would be called Immanuel, which means, “God _____.”
2. Jesus said that no one knows when He will return to earth except the _____.
3. John baptized many in the wilderness that repented of their _____.
4. Jesus answered the devil three times using the _____ of _____.
5. If we want to grow closer to God and be able to resist temptation we must spend time _____ with Him _____.
6. Jesus called His followers to be “fishers of _____.”
7. Jesus told His disciples on the boat not to _____.
8. Jesus was moved with compassion for the people because of their many _____.
9. Jesus told His followers to go out in His name being wise as _____ and harmless as _____.
10. Peter betrayed Jesus by _____ Him three times in Caiaphas’ courtyard.
11. Judas betrayed Jesus by turning Him into the priests for _____ pieces of silver.
12. Jesus _____ ALL of our sins when we confess them.

13. How did the Roman soldiers treat Jesus?
14. The chief priests came to the foot of the cross to _____ at Jesus as He died.
15. There were many strange occurrences when Jesus died including many dead people who _____ around the city of Jerusalem.
16. Joseph of Arimathea took Jesus' body to lay it in a _____.

The day after Jesus was crucified, the chief priests and Pharisees met together and again approached Pilate. They told Pilate that Jesus had prophesied that He would be raised from the dead on the third day. They asked if special security measure could be taken to ensure that no one stole the body. Pilate agreed to their request, so the group of them went to the tomb and sealed the rock that was blocking the entrance into the cave. They also left armed guards there to watch that place.

Now the day after the Sabbath, that is the very first day of the week, Mary Magdalene and the other Mary went back to the grave. But when they got there, there was a great earthquake and the stone that had been blocking the entrance into the tomb had been moved. An angel of the Lord that had come down from heaven was sitting on top of the rock that had been used to seal the grave. The angel's clothes were white like snow, and He looked as if He were lightening. The soldiers who had been guarding the tomb were also there shaking in fear until they became like dead men.

The angel told the ladies not to fear. He said, "for I know that you seek Jesus who was crucified. He is not here, for He is risen, as He said. Come; see the place where the Lord lay. And go quickly and tell His disciples that He is risen from the dead, and indeed He is going before you into Galilee; there you will see Him. Behold, I have told you."

The ladies hearing this were filled with joy and turned to run quickly back to the disciples. On their way, Jesus met them saying, "Rejoice!" So they stopped, held Him by the feet and worshipped Him. Jesus reminded the ladies to tell the disciples to meet Him in Galilee.

Meanwhile, the guards got up and went back to town to tell the chief priests everything that had happened. The chief priest met together and agreed to offer the guards a large sum of money for them to go around and

tell people that they had fallen asleep and that people had stolen Jesus' corpse. The priests then promised to protect them if Pilate found out, and they got in trouble. So the soldiers took the money, and many rumors floated around Jerusalem for many years.

The disciples went to Galilee to a specific mountain where Jesus had instructed them to go. He came to them, and they worshipped Him. However some doubted. Then Jesus spoke to them His final instructions before ascending into heaven. He said, **“All authority has been given to me in heaven and on earth. Go, therefore and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit; teaching them to observe all things that I have commanded you; and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age.”** Amen.

Oral Questions

1. Why did the Pharisees want to put guards at Jesus' grave?
2. What two ladies came to visit the gravesite?
3. What did these ladies see when they arrived there?
4. What did the angel tell them?
5. What happened to the guards?
6. Where did the guards go after the angel appeared?
7. What was the offer made them by the chief priests?
8. Who did the ladies see as they were running back to meet the disciples?
9. Where did Jesus tell His disciples to meet Him?
10. What was the command that Jesus gave His followers on the mountain before He ascended?
11. With whom did Jesus promise to be from now until the end of the age?

Spiritual Truths- Lesson 8

Matthew 28

1. The message of Jesus is to be shared to all people. It could be that God has been working in your heart giving you the strength and the desire to share His message with others. There are many ways to tell others about the love of Christ. One good way is to lead a person, or group of people, through the story of His life. You can do this through this material in seven weeks. Since lesson four, we have, as a group been praying for specific people God has laid on your heart. Hopefully you have had a chance to tell these people a little about the change that has occurred in your life. If not, make this week the week you approach them.
 - Do NOT go to this person and tell them how horrible of a person they are and that God is going to send them to unquenchable fire if they don't repent.
 - DO invite them to do a short Bible study with you in **their** home. Tell them that you have been learning about the Bible and were wondering if maybe they would be interested in studying with you about the life of Christ for seven weeks.
 - When you go to their home, take a partner with you. Maybe somebody from your Bible study group, or a person you met at church. Your Bible study leader may want to go with you.
 - When you go, spend time talking to the person about things going on in their lives. Meet their family members; listen to their needs. Pray for them, their job, their family, and ask God to bring His peace on their home.
 - Start with the first story about the birth of Christ. Allow them to ask questions. If you don't know the answer that is okay. Just tell them you will ask your Bible study leader because you don't know, and then bring the answer back the next week.
 - Do NOT stay at their home for over one hour. Remember this is a short Bible study.
 - Everyday that week and every week thereafter, pray for this person and their family. Ask your group members to join you in prayer for them.

REMEMBER: Just as we do not have power to cure anyone or expel any demons, we do not have any power to convince people of their need for Christ. The one who has the power is the Holy Spirit who lives in us. He has power to cure people of diseases; He has power to expel demons from people's lives; and He is the one who breaks the chains of sin in a person's life and brings them to repentance in Christ. Our responsibility is to share and pray.

It may be that you are in a situation where you do not have an opportunity to do a seven- week Bible study with a person, but would like to share with them about Jesus Christ.

What to do:

- Tell them, as best you can remember, the story of Christ. Tell them of His birth, His baptism, His life, His miracles, His love, His message of repentance, His betrayal, His death and His resurrection.
- Tell them that like the people in Jesus' time, we have all done wrong before God, even if we are very good people. This means we have all sinned. Give them examples of some sins: lying, stealing, hate, envy, adultery, etc.
- Tell them that just as God forgave the people in the Bible, He forgave you when you repented of your sins.
- Explain a little about your life before Christ, the moment you chose to follow Christ, and your life since Christ (your testimony).
- Read or recite one of the most important verses in the Bible, John 3:16. It says, "For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life."
- Ask the person if they also would like to repent of their sins, believe in Christ and accept the forgiveness that He can give them.
- Explain that to believe means to turn your life over to Christ. This is to trust Him and commit your life to Him.
- If they say, "yes" help them to pray a simple prayer giving their lives to God.

- If they say, “no” ask them if they would permit you to pray for them at this moment, then pray to God that He would help them understand His truth for their lives.

*Stop and take time as a group to practice presenting Christ to another person. Divide up in pairs and let each person go through an entire presentation.

After having practiced, you might think, “This is impossible, I can never tell anyone about Christ.” Think about this final truth in this study:

2. “And, lo, I am with you always even to the end of the age.” The Bible teaches that the moment we accept Christ, the Holy Spirit of God comes and dwells within our lives. You may have not realized it, but He has already been at work in your life (John 14:7).
 - He is the one who teaches us in our time alone with God everyday (John 14:26)
 - He is the one who makes us feel guilty when we disobey God. He is the One who enabled us to understand for the first time that we were sinners and needed Christ’s forgiveness in our lives. (John 16:8-11)
 - He is the one who gives us wisdom and guides us in God’s perfect will for our lives. (John 16:13)
 - He comforts us when we are sad. (Acts 9:31)
 - He empowers us with special gifts so we can do things we never even dreamed we could do. He gives us the words to tell others about Christ. (I Corinthians 12)

We may think that we can never become the kind of follower of Christ that we need to be. We may think that obeying God is impossible. The truth is that this is true. We can never do anything to follow Christ, but God can through the Holy Spirit who dwells within our lives.

This is the secret to telling others about Christ; it is the secret to living a life without fear; it is the secret to making right decisions every day. When we

allowed the Creator of the Universe to enter into our lives, He gave us the gift of His constant presence. The presence of the Holy Spirit is our source of strength and power. This is the exciting thing because the Bible teaches us that God has awesome plans, incredible ideas, and a beautiful purpose for every one of our lives. Let us finish this study with very special promise found in Jeremiah 29:11-13:

“For I know the thoughts that I think toward you, says the LORD, thoughts of peace and not of evil, to give you a future and a hope. Then you will call upon Me and go and pray to Me, and I will listen to you. And you will seek Me and find Me, when you search for Me with all your heart.”

**MAY GOD BLESS YOU AS YOU CONTINUE TO
SEEK AND KNOW HIM!**

DISCIPLESHIP TRAINING FOR LOCAL LEADERS

Waylon Moore - Thomas Wade Akins

Pioneer Evangelism Series

The Wheel of the Christian Life

Discipleship Training for Local Leaders - Lesson 1

Waylon Moore

A life filled with the Holy Spirit has Christ in the center

The body requires certain things in order to live and grow: food, air, rest, and exercise. Without these four things, in balanced proportions, the body gets sick and can even die. This is true spiritually as well. Certain things are necessary, and are necessary in a certain order or priority, in order that we may be in a correct relationship with Christ, who is our life. God wants his children to develop and mature spiritually. Col. 1:28; Eph. 4:13-15.

We use the illustration “The Wheel of the Christian Life” to demonstrate that a Christian should live in this world in an adequate relationship with the Lord and with others. The wheel represents the Christian and his life (draw a circle for the class). He/she should be in contact with the world (draw a line under the circle as I have done). Be in the world, but do not be of the world (John 17:11,14).



Each wheel has a central axle. This center is fundamental to its ability to function. Each person has something in the center of his/her life. Sometimes it is work; other times, family; and other times it is recreation, etc. (Write CHRIST in the center of the wheel). The axle is the heart of the wheel. Around it, the wheel is built and centralized, on it is the wheel is supported and balanced; from it come direction and impulse. The purpose of the wheel is always to move forward, in the direction the axle is directing. In the life of the Christian, there is stable and continual progress only when Christ is in the middle. When Jesus is not in the center of the believer's life, the career of the Christian is interrupted and his testimony voided. The Christian then runs from the purpose for which God created and saved him.

God does two wonderful things for those who trust in his Son. Through these things, He gives a quality of life that is completely different from those of the world. There are certainly more things besides these two mentioned, but they form the base for the new relationship of the Christian and for his growth in grace.

First, we have life in Christ (II Cor. 5:17; Col. 2:6, 9, 10; give these references). Our life is in Jesus. The Holy Spirit put us in the extraordinary position of being: in Christ. In times of difficulty, crisis, and tension, we must always remember this very meaningful truth.

Secondly, Christ is in us. He is our life, our axle; He is in us. We have been taken, invaded, by him! Many Scripture speak of this incredible truth: John 15:5; Philippians 1:6, Galatians 2:20; II Corinthians 13:5, etc. The source of the Christian life is the Lord Jesus, himself. Christ "in us" is literal and actual. "Remain in me, and I will remain in you"; "I in them and you in me" (John 15:4 and 17:23).

We see, for example, what Paul said in Philippians 1:21. He did not say, "For me to live is to imitate Christ", neither did he say, "For me to live with Christ as my helper," nor did he say, "For me to live is to be like Christ". He confirmed categorically, "For to me, to live is Christ and to die is gain."

C.G. Trumbell says in his book *The Life that Wins*, "The Lord does not want us to work for Him, but rather, to let Him work through us, using us like we use a pencil to write; better yet, using us like we use one of our

fingers. When our life is not only of Christ, but is Christ, it will be a life of good will and of service.”

The connection between the wheel and the axle is established through the spokes.

They transmit to the wheel the impulse and the direction that comes from the axle. What are the spokes that allow us to relate our lives to Christ? There are at least four primary spokes in our relationship. (Draw the four spokes and ask the students to mention four things that are necessary for the growth of a baby) A little baby, in his growth, needs to eat, talk, walk, and communicate. These four acts correspond to the spiritual terrain: to assimilate the Bible, to pray, to obey, and to witness.

TO EAT- Matthew 4:4; I Peter 2:2; Acts 2:42; Jeremiah 15:16; II Timothy 3:16-17; Colossians 3:16.

Each Christian needs to learn to eat regularly of the Word of God. It is spiritual food. A baby does not know how to feed itself, it needs someone to give him/her food. Through growth, he/she learns to feed himself; however, he/she still needs someone else to prepare it. As the baby develops into an adult, he/she will learn prepare his/her food by him/herself. Only when the person reaches a higher level of growth can they feed someone else. This also occurs in the spiritual realm. Sometimes Christian go directly from the receiving phase to the giving phase.

(Bring out the point that we eat every day, and we also need to study the Word every day.)

To participate in a spiritual banquet once a week, on Sunday is not, by any means, enough to feed a child of God. He/she needs daily food to meet his/her needs.

The Bible is a true “spiritual supermarket”. It has 31 thousand verses: these are canned, packaged, and frozen foods. There is adequate food for each need: vitamins, proteins, and minerals. The Christian should develop his/her capacity to select the proper food, to prepare it, and to eat it. It is also important, that he/she is able to prepare delicious and attractive refreshments for others.

TO TALK- John 16:24; Matthew 21:22; Hebrews 4:15-16; I John 5:14-15; Psalms 66:18.

To talk to God in prayer and to eat the Word of the Lord are two spokes that complete each other. These are the spokes of the wheel's passive power; they are the holders of the energy. A child is not born knowing how to talk by him/herself. He/she learns from others. Children of the faith learn to pray, by listening to others pray, and assimilating the spirit of these prayers. God desperately desires communication with us. He seeks him who worships Him in prayer (John 4:23). There are five basic types of prayer: praise and worship, thanksgiving, intercession, petition, and confession.

(Emphasize the need to daily reserve a time alone with God.)

TO WALK- John 14:21; 15:10; Hebrews 5:8-9; Genesis 22:18; II Corinthians 5:7; Amos 3:3.

We learned to walk physically one step at a time. Spiritually to walk is to obey the Lord. A life of obedience to the will of God consists of a series of steps. Paul used the word to walk to describe a normal life of a Christian (Eph. 2:10; 4:1, 17; 5:2, 8, 15). To walk is a normal act of a child during growth; abnormal, and even tragic, is it if a child cannot walk. Disobedience paralyzes the Christian life. Submission to the Holy Spirit, moment by moment, capacitates the Christian to walk correctly and be worthy before the Lord. "And we pray this in order that you may live a life worthy of the Lord and may please him in every way: bearing fruit in every good work growing in the knowledge of Christ" (Colossians 1:10).

TO COMMUNICATE- I John 1:3; I Peter 3:15; Acts 1:8; Matthew 28:19-20; Acts 22:15.

Selfishness and egocentricity ruin life. A small child is egocentric; he/she is the center of his/her own little universe. As his/her perception develops, he/she begins to understand they he/she has relations and responsibilities with others.

It is the same way with the Christian. With spiritual growth, he/she will feel the need to give, communicate, and to share. A testimony is his/her way to do this. Through one's own witness, he/she can live

altruistically and share with others his/her most precious possession: life in Christ. We testify either positively or negatively through what we say and how we live. Our witness is the overflow of Christ's love. Our obedience and witness are the spokes that are our active power; they are the energy distributors.

(The teacher should, at this time, show the difference between the "gospel" (I Corinthians 15:3-4), "a testimony" (Acts 26:3-30) and "to win souls" (Prov. 11:30; James 5:19-20).

When the Spirit uses a Christian to work in a person until they surrender to Jesus Christ, this is what is called "winning souls."

The four spokes of a wheel are interdependent to each other, and they all depend on the energy taken from the Word of God. Without the reserves of the Word and prayer, there would be no energy flow for obedience and testimony. Each spoke is indispensable. If one breaks, or is departed, the turn of the wheel is greatly inhibited. (The teacher should take out one spoke after another, etc., showing the interrelationship of the four, and emphasizing that all become useless if they are not positioned correctly, that is, firmly on the axle each in its place.)

The Holy Spirit. Many ask, "In naming these spokes wasn't the Holy Spirit left out? No, because the Holy Spirit is in all of them. He is in each phase or aspect of the Christian life, and He is indispensable to each one. These verses that we have listed below show the relationship the Holy Spirit has with each spoke of the wheel.

In salvation- John 3:5,8

In giving Christ first place- John 16:13-14

In prayer- Romans 8:26,27

In obedience- Galatians 5:25

In witnessing- Acts 1:8

The Holy Spirit, the agent of salvation, is who enables us to be in Christ. Since the moment we were saved, He came to dwell in our lives, making of us an earthly home (I Corinthians 6:19,20). We become his property. We become his "base of operation", through Him, Jesus Christ is introduced to the world. There is not a victorious life outside his

constant control. We are filled by his Word, “be filled with the Spirit” (Ephesians 5:18). The Greek word “to fill” means “to control.” He is the Person who controls us, when, by faith, we submit to Him. The man who is dominated and guided by the Holy Spirit is always someone whose spokes are firm and placed correctly. In such a life, obviously, Christ is the center.

GOD'S PLAN THROUGH YOUR LIFE - Part I

Discipleship Training for Local Leaders - Lesson 2

Waylon Moore

1. Why did God create you? “For His glory”

- “If anyone speaks, he should do it as one speaking the very words of God. If anyone serves, he should do it with the strength God provides, so that in all things God may be praised through Jesus Christ. To him be the glory and the power for ever and ever. Amen.” (I Peter 4:11)
- “So whether you eat or drink or whatever you do, do it all for the glory of God. Do not cause anyone to stumble, whether Jews, Greeks, or the church of God.” (I Corinthians 10:31,32)

2. How to glorify God?

- “He who sacrifices thank offerings honors me, and he prepares the way so that I may show him the salvation of God.” (Psalms 50:23)
- “In the same way, let your light shine before men, that they may see your good deeds and praise your Father in heaven” (Matthew 5:16)
- “This is my Father’s glory, that you bear much fruit, showing yourselves to be my disciples.” (John 15:8)
- “Live such good lives among the pagans that, though they accuse you of doing wrong, they may see your good deeds, and glorify God on the day he visits us.” (I Peter 2:12)
- “And I will do whatever you ask in my name, so that the Son may bring glory to the Father.” (John 14:13)
- “Do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit, who is in you, whom you have received from God? You are not your own; you were bought at a price. Therefore honor God with your body.” (I Corinthians 6:19,20)
- “You are worthy, our Lord and God, to receive glory and honor and power, for you created all things, and by your will they were created and have their being.” (Revelation 4:11)

3. How can we please God?

- “And we pray this in order that you may live a life worthy of the Lord and may please him in every way: bearing fruit in every good work, growing in the knowledge of God, being strengthened with all power according to his glorious might so that you may have great endurance and patience, and joyfully giving thanks to the Father.” (Colossians 1:10,11)
- “It is God’s will that you should be sanctified: that you should avoid sexual immorality, that each of you should learn to control his own body in a way that is holy and honorable,” (I Thessalonians 4:3-4)
- “And without faith it is impossible to please God, because anyone who comes to him must believe that he exists and that he rewards those who earnestly seek him.” (Hebrews 11:6)
- “We who are strong ought to bear with the failing of the weak and not to please ourselves. Each of us should please his neighbor for his good, to build him up. For even Christ did not please himself but, as it is written: ‘The insults of those who insult you have fallen on me.’” (Romans 15:1-3)
- “I will praise God’s name in song and glorify him with thanksgiving. This will please the Lord more than an ox, more than a bull with its horns and hoofs.” (Psalms 69:30,31)

4. Example of Jesus’ reaction to people- Faith in daily walk.

- “He said to his disciples, ‘Why are you so afraid? Do you still have no faith?’” (Mark 4:40) Jesus did not see faith in his disciples.
- The episode of Jesus walking on the water. “...When the disciples saw him walking on the lake, they were terrified. ‘It’s a ghost,’ they said and cried out with fear. But Jesus immediately said to them: ‘Take courage! It is I. Don’t be afraid.’ ‘Lord, if it’s you,’ Peter replied, ‘tell me to come to you on the water.’ ‘Come,’ He said. Then Peter got down out of the boat, walked on the water and came toward Jesus. But when he saw the wind, he was afraid and, beginning to sin, cried out, ‘Lord, save me!’ Immediately Jesus reached out his hand and caught him. ‘You of little

faith,' he said, 'why did you doubt?' (Matthew 14:22-31) Jesus saw little faith in Peter.

· Episode of the Canaanite woman. "Jesus answered, 'I was sent only to the lost sheep of Israel.' The woman came and knelt before him, 'Lord, help me!'" she said. He replied, 'It is not right to take the children's bread and toss it to the dogs.' 'Yes, Lord,' she said, 'but even the dogs eat the crumbs that fall from their masters' table,' Then Jesus answered, 'Woman, great is your faith!'" (Matthew 15:22-28)

· The Christian needs to mature in Christ to become like Him. "Then we will no longer be infants, tossed back and forth by the waves, and blown here and there by every wind of teaching and by the cunning and craftiness of men in their deceitful scheming. Instead, speaking the truth in love, we will in all things grow up into him who is the Head, that is Christ." (Ephesians 4:14-15)

The goal of the Christian life is not success, but the character of Christ. People are called by God to achieve perfection among the Christian. God's goal for us is MATURITY. II Corinthians 4:7 says, "But we have this treasure in jars of clay to show that this all-surpassing power is from God and not from us."

GOD'S PLAN THROUGH YOUR LIFE - Part II

Discipleship Training for Local Leaders - Lesson 3

Waylon Moore

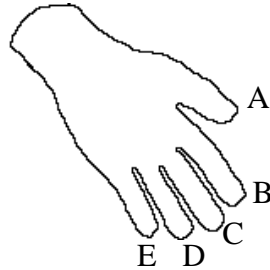
Understanding the Word of God

- A. LISTEN** to God speak. “Whoever does God’s will is my brother and sister and mother.” (Mark 3:35)
- B. READ** to grow. “Until I come, devote yourself to the public reading of the Scripture, to preaching and to teaching.” (I Timothy 4:13)
- C. STUDY** the Word to change. “Now the Bereans were of more noble character than the Thessalonians, for they received the message with great eagerness and examined the Scriptures every day to see if what Paul said was true.” (Acts 17:11)
- D. MEMORIZE** in order to take the Word everywhere.
- E. MEDITATE** to apply. “When your words came, I ate them; they were my joy and my heart’s delight, for I bear your name, O Lord God Almighty. (Jeremiah 15:16) “But his delight is in the law of the Lord, and on his law he meditates day and night.” (Psalms 1:2)
Some questions must be made when studying the Word of God.

- What is the most important lesson?
- What is this text saying about God...Jesus?
- Does this chapter give me:
 - something to know
 - something to change
 - something to do
 - something to start

THE HAND SKETCH

- A. LISTEN
- B. READ
- C. STUDY
- D. MEMORIZE
- E. MEDITATE



“All scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness, so that the men of God may be thoroughly equipped for every good work.” (II Timothy 3:16-17)

HOW TO HAVE A TIME ALONE WITH GOD - Part I

Discipleship Training for Local Leaders - Lesson 4

Thomas Wade Akins

INTRODUCTION

It is impossible to be a disciple of Jesus Christ except by being a person of prayer. You must be determined to make your time alone with God a priority in your life. If this is not the case, you will not know God in a deep way, you will not stay in his ways, nor will you produce fruit.

Do you know who you really are? Are you the kind of person who acts normally when no one is watching you? Who are you in the dark? Think! That person is you in reality! So, during your time alone with God, no one is watching you except God.

Let us observe eight aspects of prayer that you may use during your time alone with God.

WORSHIP AND PRAISE

The Bible says in Psalms 48:1, “Great is the Lord, and most worthy of praise..” Psalms 34:1-3 says, “I will extol the Lord at all times; His praise will always be on my lips. My soul will boast in the Lord; let the afflicted hear and rejoice. Glorify the Lord with me; let us exalt his name together.”

We praise the Lord during the worship service in church on Sundays. But, do you worship God when you are alone with Him from Monday to Saturday? The Bible says in Psalms 22:3, “Yet you are enthroned as the Holy One; You are the praise of Israel.”

What is worship? Worship is praising God for who He is. Thanksgiving is thanking Him for what He has done for us. Worship is praising the character and attributes of God.

To worship God, Biblically speaking, man must use his mind, will and emotions. It is not wrong to express your emotions in the worship service when you are worshipping God. To say that this is wrong is the same thing as saying you cannot use your mind or your will. That is absurd! Man has a body, a soul (mind, will, and emotions), and a spirit (I Thessalonians 5:23).

However, there is a big difference between emotion and emotionalism. Emotionalism is to lose control of one's emotions. If this happens, the worship service is out of Biblical limits. The Bible does not prohibit us from using our emotions during a worship service; however, it is against emotionalism.

How can you worship God in your time alone with Him? Here are a few suggestions!

A. Sing hymns using the Baptist Hymnal or any other hymnal.

If there are people in the same room, simply read the words of the hymn to God in your mind. For example, the hymn number 1, "Holy, Holy, Holy" is a great hymn of worship. Read the first verse. Stop. Think and meditate on the meaning of the words and praise God based on the words of this verse. Follow on with the second verse, and do the same thing. Continue through the rest of the hymn. In the subject index of the Baptist Hymnal, there is a list of hymns of worship (or praise).

B. Sing or read spiritual choruses.

The Bible says in Ephesians 5:19-20, "Speak to one another with psalms, hymns and spiritual songs. Sing and make music in your heart to the Lord, always giving thanks to God the Father for everything, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ." Be assured that spiritual choruses are Biblically correct. In other words, be assured that the spiritual choruses that you use are not false doctrines.

C. Read the passages and prayers in the Bible to God, and personalize each verse.

Psalms 8:1 says, "O Lord, our Lord, how majestic is your name in all the earth! You have set your glory above the heavens." To personalize this verse, put your name in the verse. For example, "O Lord, "my" Lord, how majestic is Your name in all of the earth. You have set your glory above the heavens. Read

each verse one time as it is written in the Bible, and afterwards read it again and personalize the verse so that you may use the Word of God to worship Him.

Some chapters that are adequate include: Psalms 8, 9, 19, 24, 65, 92, 104, 139; the prayers of Jesus and of the apostle Paul, and other chapters of the book of Revelation, amongst these are chapters 4 and 5. You may also look up the word “praise” in a concordance.

Praise is very important for the spiritual growth of our lives. Read Revelation 4 and 5 to understand what we will be doing in heaven.

Exercise: Right now, use the Baptist Hymnal or a spiritual chorus or verse to worship in your time alone with God.

HOW TO HAVE A TIME ALONE WITH GOD - Part II

Discipleship Training for Local Leaders - Lesson 5

Thomas Wade Akins

CONFESSION OF SINS

I do not believe that you should use a lot of time in confession. If you commit a sin, I believe the Holy Spirit will convict you of it at that time. When He speaks to your conscious and tells you that you have sinned, you should confess that sin at that time. The Bible says in I John 1:9, “If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and cleanse us of all unrighteousness.”

But, during your quiet time, perhaps God will bring to mind some recent sins. Perhaps you have a bad attitude towards someone, anger, or bitterness. In this case, you should confess all of these sins in your heart.

THANKSGIVING

The Bible says in Philippians 4:6, “Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God.”

Thanksgiving is to thank God for His actions. For example, “I thank-you Lord for my health, my food, my job, etc.

HEARING GOD’S VOICE

The Bible says in Psalms 6:5, “Find rest, O my soul, in God alone; my hope comes from Him.” Psalms 46:10 says, “Be still and know that I am God...”

How can you hear the voice of the Lord? Personally, I have never heard the Lord speak to me in a loud voice to me, but I have heard the voice of the Lord many times in my life. How?

God primarily uses two ways to speak to you daily: the Holy Spirit and the Word of God. Romans 10:17 says, “Consequently, faith comes from hearing the message, and the message is heard through the word of Christ.”

The Bible is a love letter from God to you. God's desire is to talk with you everyday by the Holy Spirit through the word of God. I would like to suggest some ways to hear the voice of the Lord.

- A. Begin with one book of the Bible. My suggestion is to begin with the book of Ephesians.
- B. Ask the Lord to show you a spiritual truth or truths in each verse or paragraph. For example, Ephesians 1:1 says, "Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the will of God, to the saints in Ephesus, the faithful in Christ Jesus." What spiritual truths are found in this verse?
 - 1) Paul is a Christian and an apostle of Jesus Christ.
 - 2) He was chosen by the will of God.
 - 3) The word "saints" refers to the Christian in Ephesus.
 - 4) These Christian were faithful in Christ Jesus.
- C. Personalize each spiritual truth. God is speaking to you through each of these truths. The Bible is a love letter from God to you. For example, God is telling me three truths in this verse:
 - 1) Wade, you are a disciple of Jesus Christ by My will.
 - 2) Wade, I choose you by My will.
 - 3) Wade, you are a saint in Belo Horizonte.
 - 4) Wade, I want you to be faithful in Christ Jesus.

PARAPHRASE THE WORD OF GOD

You can use a verse to pray. For example, use Ephesians, "My Father, my God, I thank You Lord because You called me to be a disciple of Jesus Christ. I thank you Lord because I am a saint of Jesus- a person separated by the Lord. Father, my desire is to be faithful to Christ. In Jesus' name, Amen."

After doing this, read the next verse and do the same thing.

Exercise: Do this right now with your group.

HOW TO HAVE A TIME ALONE WITH GOD - Part III

Discipleship Training for Local Leaders - Lesson 6 -

Thomas Wade Akins

INTERCESSION

The Bible says in Ephesians 6:18, “And pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests. With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the saints.”

Intercession is prayer for other people. Maybe you have a blank page in your Bible. Divide this page in columns or in a notebook, and make a list of the people for whom you will pray each day.

For example, write the word “DAILY” in your first column or on your first page. Under this word write the names of your spouse, your children, your mother, father, brothers, etc.

On the next page or column, write the word “SUNDAY”. Under this word, make a list of people that includes your pastor and his wife, and your Sunday school teacher and classmates.

Write the word “TUESDAY” on the next page or column. In this list write the names of the members of your extended family and your friends.

On the next page or column, write the word “WEDNESDAY”. This list may include the names of some missionaries, the leaders in the Convention, and other leaders in your church.

On the column marked “THURSDAY”, write the names of the political leaders. I Timothy 2:1-2 says, “I urge, then, first of all, that requests, prayers, intercession and thanksgiving be made for everyone—for kings and all those in authority, that we may live peaceful and quiet lives in all godliness and holiness.”

Write the word “FRIDAY” on the next column or page. Under this word, make a list of the people who have back-slidden from the church or other lost people.

Write the word “SATURDAY” in the last column or on the last page. On this list write the names of those people who are your friends, other members of your church, and the names of special projects with which your church is involved.

PIONEER EVANGELISM

If you do this, you can pray for many people each week. Read Romans 16. Some think this chapter is Paul's prayer list for the Christian in Rome.

Exercise: Right now, the pioneer should help each member of the group make group make lists of people and countries of the world each day.group make lists of people and countries of the world each day.

SUPPLICATION

The Bible says in Hebrews 4:16, "Therefore, since we have a great high priest who has gone through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold firmly to the faith we profess."

To supplicate is to make requests to God.

HOW TO HAVE A TIME ALONE WITH GOD - Part IV

Discipleship Training for Local Leaders - Lesson 7

Thomas Wade Akins

MEDITATION ON THE WORD OF GOD

The Bible says in Joshua 1:8, “Do not let this Book of the Law depart from your mouth; meditate on it day and night, so that you may be careful to do everything written in it. Then you will be prosperous and successful.” This verse says that if you meditate on the word of God day and night, God will change your life. Romans 8:29 says that God’s purpose is to conform us to the image of Jesus Christ. The result of this is that you will prosper in your ways and experience success in your life. How can you meditate on God’s word day and night?

How can you meditate on God’s word day and night when you are asleep? Do the following to meditate on God’s word.

- A. Choose one verse of the Bible per week.
- B. Read this verse in context.
- C. Ask God to show you a spiritual truth from this verse.
- D. Personalize this verse in prayer.
- E. Write this verse on a card and include the reference.
- F. During the day read this verse several times. You can do this when you are waiting in a line or during your time alone with God. Do this at least five times a day.
- G. The last thing to do each night is read the verse, by doing this the verse will enter into your subconscious.

Exercise: Give each person in the group a verse and card and go through items A-G.

BIBLIOGRAFY

- AKINS, Thomas Wade. Treinamento Para Testemunho Pessoal. Junta de Missões Nacionais da CBB. Ríó de Janeiro, Brasil. 1989.
- AKINS, Thomas Wade. Na Beira do Abismo. Junta de Educação Religiosa e Publicaciones da CBB. Ríó de Janeiro, Brasil. 1994.
- BARNES, Frank. O Que Jesus Deseja Que Você Faça. Junta de Missões Nacionais da CBB. Ríó de Janeiro, Brasil. 1991.
- BLACKMON, Dennis Lester. Pré-evangelização. Junta de Missões Nacionais da CBB. Ríó de Janeiro, Brasil. 1989.
- BROCK, Charles. Indigenous Church Planting. Broadman Press. Nashville, Tennessee. 1981.
- GREENWAY, Roger S. Guidelines For Urban Church Planting. Baker Book House Company, Ann Arbor, Michigan. 1976.
- HODGES, Melvin L. The Indigenous Church. Gospel Publishing House. Springfield, Missouri. 1976.
- LORD, Peter. Hearing God. Baker Book House. Grand Rapids, Michigan. 1988.
- MOORE, Waylon B. Multiplying Disciples. Missions Unlimited. Tampa, Florida. 1981.
- MOORE, Waylon B. New Testament Follow-Up. Wm. B. Eerdmans Company. Grand Rapids, Michigan. 1963.
- NEIGHBOUR, Ralph W. Jr. Survival Kit. Convention Press. Nashville, Tennessee. 1979.

TIPPIT, Sammy. The Prayer Factor. Moody Press. Chicago, Illinois. 1988

WILLIS, Jr. Avery, T. Vida Magistral. . Junta de Educação Religiosa e Publicaciones da CBB. Río de Janeiro, Brasil. 1994.

WINTER, Ralph D. Perspectives on the World Christian Movement. William Carey Library. Pasadena, California. 1981.

